1827
1213

THE ADVENTURES OF EREGRINE PICKLE.

IN WHICH ARE INCLUDED,

MEMOIRS OF A LADY OF QUALITY.

BY DR. SMOLLETT.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

Cooke's Edition.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. I.

Respicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, et veras hinc ducere voces. Hor.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoster-Row;
And sold by all the Booksellers in
Town and Country.

MAHARAJA SERFOJI'S SARAS

THE TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOJI'S SARASWATI MAHAL.
1213

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

CHAP. I.

An Account of Mr. Gamaliel Pickle. The Diſpoſition of his Siſter deſcribed. He yields to her Solicitations, and returns to the Country.

IN a certain county of England, bounded on one ſide by the ſea, and at the diſtance of one hundred miles from the metropolis, lived Gamaliel Pickle, Eſq. the father of that hero whoſe adventures we propoſe to record. He was the ſon of a merchant in London, who (like Rome) from ſmall beginnings, had raiſed himſelf to the higheſt honours of the city, and acquired a plentiful fortune; though, to his infinite regret, he died before it amounted to a plumb; conjuring his ſon, as he reſpected the laſt injunction of a parent, to imitate his induſtry, and adhere to his maxims, until he ſhould have made up the deficiency, which was a ſum conſiderably leſs than fifteen thouſand pounds.

This pathetic remonſtrance had the deſired effect upon his repreſentative, who ſpared no pains to fulfil the requeſt of the deceaſed; but exerted all the capacity with which nature had endowed him, in a ſeries of efforts, which, however, did not ſucceed; for by that time he had been fifreen years in trade, he found himſelf five thouſand pounds worſe than he was when he firſt took poſſeſſion of his father's effects: a circumſtance that affected him ſo nearly, as to detach his in-

clinations from bufinefs, and induce him to retire from the world, to fome place where he might at leifure deplore his misfortunes, and, by frugality, fecure himfelf from want, and the apprehenfions of a jail, with which his imagination was inceffantly haunted. He was often heard to exprefs his fears of coming upon the parifh; and to blefs God, that, on account of his having been fo long a houfekeeper, he was intitled to that provifion. In fhort, his talents were not naturally active, and there was a fort of inconfiftency in his character; for, with all the defire of amaffing, which any citizen could poffibly entertain, he was encumbered by a certain indolence and fluggifhnefs that prevailed over every interefted confideration, and even hindered him from profiting by that finglenefs of apprehenfion, and moderation of appetites, which have fo frequently conduced to the acquifition of immenfe fortunes; qualities which he poffeffed in a very remarkable degree. Nature, in all probability, had mixed little or nothing inflammable in his compofition; or, whatever feeds of excefs fhe might have fown within him, were effectually ftifled and deftroyed by the aufterity of his education.

The fallies of his youth, far from being inordinate or criminal, never exceeded the bounds of that decent jollity which an extraordinary pot, on extraordinary occafions, may be fuppofed to have produced in a club of fedate book-keepers, whofe imaginations were neither very warm nor luxuriant. Little fubject to refined fenfations, he was fcarce ever difturbed with violent emotions of any kind. The paffion of love never interrupted his tranquility; and if, as Mr. Creech fays after Horace,

> Not to admire is all the art I know,
> To make men happy, and to keep them fo;

Mr. Pickle was, undoubtedly, poffeffed of that invaluable fecret; at leaft, he was never known to betray the fainteft fymptom of tranfport, except one evening at the club, where he obferved, with fome demonftrations

of

of vivacity, that he had dined upon a delicate loin of veal.

Notwithſtanding this appearance of phlegm, he could not help feeling his diſappointments in trade; and upon the failure of a certain under-writer, by which he loſt five hundred pounds, declared his deſign of relinquiſhing buſineſs, and retiring to the country. In this reſolution he was comforted and encouraged by his only ſiſter, Mrs. Grizzle, who had managed his family ſince the death of his father, and was now in the thirtieth year of her maidenhood, with a fortune of five thouſand pounds, and a large ſtock of œconomy and devotion.

Theſe qualifications, one would think, might have been the means of abridging the term of her celibacy, as ſhe never expreſſed any averſion to wedlock; but, it ſeems, ſhe was too delicate in her choice, to find a mate to her inclination in the city: for I cannot ſuppoſe that ſhe remained ſo long unſolicited; though the charms of her perſon were not altogether enchanting, nor her manner over and above agreeable. Excluſive of a very wan (not to call it ſallow) complexion, which, perhaps, was the effects of her virginity and mortification, ſhe had a caſt in her eyes that was not at all engaging, and ſuch an extent of mouth, as no art or affectation could contract into any proportionable dimenſion: then, her piety was rather peeviſh than reſigned, and did not in the leaſt diminiſh a certain ſtatelineſs in her demeanour and converſation, that delighted in communicating the importance and honour of her family; which by the bye, was not to be traced two generations back, by all the power of heraldry or tradition.

She ſeemed to have renounced all the ideas ſhe had acquired before her father ſerved the office of ſheriff; and the æra which regulated the dates of all her obſervations, was the mayoralty of her papa. Nay, ſo ſolicitous was this good lady for the ſupport and propagation of the family-name, that ſuppreſſing every ſelfiſh motive, ſhe actually prevailed upon her brother to

combat with his own diſpoſition, and even ſurmount it ſo far, as to declare a paſſion for the perſon whom he afterwards wedded, as we ſhall ſee in the ſequel. Indeed, ſhe was the ſpur that inſtigated him in all his extraordinary undertakings; and I queſtion whether or not he would have been able to diſengage himſelf from that courſe of life in which he had been ſo long mechanically moved, unleſs he had been rouzed and actuated by her inceſſant exhortations. London, ſhe obſerved, was a receptacle of iniquity, where an honeſt unſuſpecting man was every day in danger of falling a ſacrifice to craft; where innocence was expoſed to continual temptations, and virtue eternally perſecuted by malice and ſlander; where every thing was ruled by caprice and corruption, and merit utterly diſcouraged and deſpiſed. This laſt imputation ſhe pronounced with ſuch emphaſis and chagrin, as plainly denoted how far ſhe conſidered herſelf as an example of what ſhe advanced; and really the charge was juſtified by the conſtructions that were put upon her retreat by her female friends, who, far from imputing it to the laudable motives that induced her, inſinuated, in ſarcaſtic commendations, that ſhe had good reaſon to be diſſatisfied with a place where ſhe had been ſo long overlooked; and that it was certainly her wiſeſt courſe to make her laſt effort in the country, where, in all probability, her talents would be leſs eclipſed, and her fortune more attractive.

Be this as it will, her admonitions, though they were powerful enough to convince, would have been inſufficient to overcome the languor and *vis inertiæ* of her brother, had ſhe not reinforced her arguments, by calling in queſtion the credit of two or three merchants, with whom he was embarked in trade.

Alarmed at theſe hints of intelligence, he exerted himſelf effectually; he withdrew his money from trade, and laying it out in bank-ſtock and India-bonds, removed to a houſe in the country, which his father had built near the ſea-ſide, for the convenience of carrying

on a certain branch of traffick in which he had been deeply concerned.

Here then Mr. Pickle fixed his habitation for life, in the ſix and thirtieth year of his age: and though the pangs he felt at parting with his intimate companions, and quitting all his former connexions, were not quite ſo keen as to produce any dangerous diſorder in his conſtitution, he did not fail to be extremely diſconcerted at his firſt entrance into a ſcene of life to which he was totally a ſtranger. Not but that he met with abundance of people in the country, who, in conſideration of his fortune, courted his acquaintance, and breathed nothing but friendſhip and hoſpitality: yet even the trouble of receiving and returning theſe civilities, was an intolerable fatigue to a man of his habits and diſpoſition. He therefore left the care of the ceremonial to his ſiſter, who indulged herſelf in all the pride of formality; while he himſelf having made a diſcovery of a publick-houſe in the neighbourhood, went thither every evening, and enjoyed his pipe and cann; being very well ſatisfied with the behaviour of the landlord, whoſe communicative temper was a great comfort to his own taciturnity; for he ſhunned all ſuperfluity of ſpeech, as much as he avoided any other unneceſſary expence.

CHAP. II.

He is made acquainted with the Characters of Commodore Trunnion and his Adherents; meets with them by Accident, and contracts an Intimacy with that Commander.

THIS loquacious publican ſoon gave him ſketches of all the characters in the county; and, among others, deſcribed that of his next neighbour, Commodore Trunnion, which was altogether ſingular and odd. ‘The commodore and your worſhip,’ ſaid he, ‘will in a ſhort time be hand and glove; he has a power of money, and ſpends it like a prince—that is, in his own way; for to be ſure he is a little humorſome, as the ſaying is, and ſwears woundily; though

I'll be ſworn he means no more harm than a ſucking babe. Lord help us! it will do your honour's heart good to hear him tell a ſtory, as how he lay along-ſide of the French, yard-arm and yard-arm, board and board, and of heaving grapplings, and ſtink-pots, and grapes, and round and double-headed partridges, crows and carters. Laud have mercy upon us! he has been a great warrior in his time, and loſt an eye and a heel in the ſervice. Then he does not live like any other Chriſtian landman; but keeps garriſon in his houſe, as if he were in the midſt of his enemies, and makes his ſervants turn out in the night, watch and watch, (as he calls it) all the year round. His habitation is defended by a ditch, over which he has laid a draw-bridge, and planted his court-yard with petereroes continually loaded with ſhot, under the direction of one Mr. Hatchway, who had one of his legs ſhot away while he acted as lieutenant on board the commodore's ſhip; and now being on half-pay, lives with him as his companion. The lieutenant is a very brave man, a great joker, and, as the ſaying is, has got the length of his commander's foot. Though he has another favourite in the houſe, called Tom Pipes, that was his boatſwain's mate, and now keeps the ſervants in order. Tom is a man of a few words, but an excellent hand at a ſong concerning the boatſwain's whiſtle, huſſle-cap, and chuck-farthing—there is not ſuch another pipe in the county. So that the commodore lives very happy in his own manner; thof he be ſometimes thrown into perilous paſſions and quandaries, by the application of his poor kinſmen, whom he can't abide, becauſe as how ſome of them were the firſt occaſion of his going to ſea. Then he ſweats with agony at the ſight of an attorney; juſt for all the world, as ſome people have an antipathy to a cat; for it ſeems he was once at law for ſtriking one of his officers, and caſt in a ſwinging ſum. He is, moreover, exceedingly afflicted with goblins that diſturb his reſt, and keep ſuch a racket in his houſe, that you would think (God bleſs us!)

us!) all the devils in hell had broke looſe upon him. It was no longer ago than laſt year, about this time, that he was tormented the live-long night by two miſchievous ſpirits that got into his chamber, and played a thouſand pranks about his hammock, (for there is not one bed within his walls.) Well, Sir, he rung his bell, called up all his ſervants, got lights, and made a thorough ſearch; but the devil a goblin was to be found. He had no ſooner turned in again, and the reſt of the family gone to ſleep, than the foul fiends began their game anew. The commodore got up in the dark, drew his cutlaſs, and attacked them both ſo manfully, that, in five minutes, every thing in the apartment went to pieces. The lieutenant hearing the noiſe, came to his aſſiſtance. Tom Pipes being told what was the matter, lighted his match, and going down to the yard, fired all the petereroes as ſignals of diſtreſs. Well, to be ſure, the whole pariſh was in a pucker! ſome thought the French had landed; others imagined the commodore's houſe was beſet by thieves. For my own part, I called up two dragoons that are quartered upon me; and they ſwore with deadly oaths, it was a gang of ſmugglers engaged with a party of their regiment that lies in the next village; and mounting their horſes like luſty fellows, rode up into the country as faſt as their beaſts could carry them. Ah, maſter! theſe are hard times, when an induſtrious body cannot earn his bread without fear of the gallows. Your worſhip's father (God reſt his ſoul!) was a good gentleman, and as well reſpected in this pariſh, as e'er a he that walks upon neat's leather. And if your honour ſhould want a ſmall parcel of fine tea, or a few anchovies of right Nantz, I'll be bound you ſhall be furniſhed to your heart's content. But, as I was ſaying, the hubbub continued till morning, when the parſon being ſent for, conjured the ſpirits into the Red Sea; and the houſe has been pretty quiet ever ſince. True it is, Mr. Hatchway makes a mock of the whole affair; and told his commander in this very bleſſed ſpot, that the two goblins were no

other than a couple of jackdaws which had fallen down the chimney, and made a flapping with their wings up and down the apartment. But the commodore, who is very cholerick, and does not like to be jeered, fell into a main high paſſion, and ſtormed like a perfect hurricane, ſwearing that he knew the devil from a jackdaw as well as e'er a man in the three kingdoms. He owned, indeed, that the birds were found, but denied that they were the occaſion of the uproar. For my own part, maſter, I believe much may be ſaid on both ſides of the queſtion; thof, to be ſure, the devil is always going about, as the ſaying is.'

This circumſtantial account, extraordinary as it was, never altered one feature in the countenance of Mr. Pickle, who having heard it to an end, took the pipe from his mouth, ſaying, with a look of infinite ſagacity and deliberation, 'I do ſuppoſe he is of the Corniſh Trunnions. What ſort of a woman is his ſpouſe?' 'Spouſe!' cried the other; 'odds heart! I don't think he would marry the Queen of Sheba. Lack-a-day, Sir! he won't ſuffer his own maids to lie in the garriſon, but turns them into an out-houſe every night before the watch is ſet. Bleſs your honour's ſoul! he is, as it were, a very oddiſh kind of a gentleman. Your worſhip would have ſeen him before now; for, when he is well, he and my good maſter Hatchway come hither every evening, and drink a couple of canns of rumbo a-piece; but he has been confined to his houſe this fortnight by a plaguy fit of the gout, which, I'll aſſure your worſhip, is a good penny out of my pocket.'

At that inſtant, Mr. Pickle's ears were ſaluted with ſuch a ſtrange noiſe, as even diſcompoſed the muſcles of his face, which gave immediate indications of alarm. This compoſition of notes at firſt reſembled the crying of quails, and croaking of bull-frogs; but as it approached nearer, he could diſtinguiſh articulate ſounds pronounced with great violence, in ſuch a cadence as one would expect to hear from a human creature ſcolding through the organs of an aſs. It was neither ſpeak-

ing

ing nor braying, but a surprizing mixture of both, employed in the utterance of terms absolutely unintelligible to our wondering merchant, who had just opened his mouth to express his curiosity, when the landlord, starting up at the well-known sound, cried—'Odds niggers! there is the commodore with his company, as sure as I live!' and with his apron began to wipe the dust off an elbow-chair placed at one side of the fire, and kept sacred for the ease and convenience of the infirm commander. While he was thus occupied, a voice still more uncouth than the former, bawled aloud—'Ho! the house, a hoy!' Upon which the publican, clapping a hand to each side of his head, with his thumbs fixed to his ears, re-bellowed in the same tone, which he had learned to imitate—'Hilloah!' The voice again exclaimed—'Have you got any attornies aboard?' And when the landlord replied—'No, no;' this man of strange expectation came in, supported by his two dependants, and displayed a figure every way answerable to the oddity of his character. He was in stature at least six feet high, though he had contracted a habit of stooping, by living so long on board; his complexion was tawny, and his aspect rendered hideous by a large scar across his nose, and a patch that covered the place of one eye. Being seated in his chair, with great formality the landlord complimented him upon his being able to come abroad again; and having, in a whisper, communicated the name of his fellow-guest, whom the commodore already knew by report, went to prepare, with all imaginable dispatch, the first allowance of his favourite liquor, in three separate canns, (for each was accommodated with his portion apart) while the lieutenant sat down on the blind side of his commander; and Tom Pipes, knowing his distance, with great modesty took his station in the rear. After a pause of some minutes, the conversation was begun by this ferocious chief, who fixing his eye upon the lieutenant with a sternness of countenance not to be described, addressed him in these words

—'D—n

—' D—n my eyes! Hatchway, I always took you to be a better ſeaman than to overſet our chaiſe in ſuch fair weather. Blood! didn't I tell you we were running bump aſhore, and bid you ſet in the lee-brace, and haul upon a wind?'—' Yes,' replied the other with an arch ſneer, ' I do confeſs as how you did give ſuch orders, after you had run us foul of a poſt, ſo as that the carriage lay along, and could not right herſelf.'—' I run you foul of a poſt!' cried the commander; ' d—n my heart! you're a pretty dog, an't you, to tell me ſo above-board to my face? Did I take the charge of the chaiſe? Did I ſtand at the helm?'—' No,' anſwered Hatchway; ' I confeſs you did not ſteer; but howſomever, you cunned all the way; and ſo, as you could not ſee how the land lay, being blind of your larboard eye, we were faſt aſhore, before you knew any thing of the matter. Pipes, who ſtood abaft, can teſtify the truth of what I ſay.'—' D—n my limbs!' reſumed the commodore, ' I don't value what you or Pipes ſay a rope-yarn. You're a couple of mutinous——I'll ſay no more; but, you ſhan't run your rig upon me, d—n ye! I am the man that learnt you, Jack Hatchway, to ſplice a rope, and raiſe a perpendicular.'

The lieutenant, who was perfeƈtly well acquainted with the trim of his captain, did not chuſe to carry on the altercation any farther; but taking up his cann, drank to the health of the ſtranger, who very courteouſly returned the compliment, without, however, preſuming to join in the converſation, which ſuffered a conſiderable pauſe. During this interruption, Mr. Hatchway's wit diſplayed itſelf in ſeveral praƈtical jokes upon the commodore, with whom, he knew, it was dangerous to tamper in any other way. Being without the ſphere of his viſion, he ſecurely pilfered his tobacco, drank his rumbo, made wry faces, and (to uſe the vulgar phraſe) cocked his eye at him, to the no ſmall entertainment of the ſpeƈtators, Mr. Pickle himſelf not excepted, who gave evident tokens of uncommon ſatisfaƈtion at the dexterity of this marine pantomime.

Meanwhile,

Meanwhile, the captain's choler gradually ſubſided, and he was pleaſed to deſire Hatchway, by the familiar and friendly diminutive of Jack, to read a newſpaper that lay on the table before him. This taſk was accordingly undertaken by the lame lieutenant, who, among other paragraphs, read that which follows, with an elevation of voice that ſeemed to prognoſticate ſomething extraordinary. 'We are informed, that Admiral Bower will very ſoon be created a Britiſh peer, for his eminent ſervices during the war, particularly in his late engagement with the French fleet.' Trunnion was thunderſtruck at this piece of intelligence. The mug dropped from his hand and ſhivered into a thouſand pieces; his eye gliſtened like that of a rattle-ſnake, and ſome minutes elapſed before he could pronounce—'Avaſt! overhaul that article again.' It was no ſooner read the ſecond time, than ſmiting the table with his fiſt, he ſtarted up, and with the moſt violent emphaſis of rage and indignation, exclaimed—'D—n my heart and liver! it is a land lye, d'ye ſee; and I will maintain it to be a lye, from the ſprit-ſail-yard to the mizen-top-ſail haulyards! Blood and thunder! Will Bower a peer of the realm! a fellow of yeſterday, that ſcarce knows a maſt from a manger; a ſnotty-noſe boy, whom I myſelf have ordered to the gun, for ſtealing eggs out of the hen-coop! and I, Hawſer Trunnion, who commanded a ſhip before he could keep a reckoning, am laid aſide, d'ye ſee, and forgotten! If ſo be, as this is the caſe, there is a rotten plank in our conſtitution, which ought to be hove down and repaired, d—n my eyes! For my own part, d'ye ſee, I was none of your guinea-pigs; I did not riſe in the ſervice by parliamenteering intereſt, or a handſome bitch of a wife. I was not hoiſted over the bellies of better men, nor ſtrutted athwart the quarter-deck in a laced doublet, and thingumbobs at the wriſts. D—n my limbs! I have been a hard-working man, and ſerved all offices on board, from cook's ſhifter to the command of a veſſel. Here, you Tunley, there's the hand of a ſeaman,

you dog.' So ſaying, he laid hold on the landlord's fiſt, and honoured him with ſuch a ſqueeze, as compelled him to roar with great vociferation, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the commodore, whoſe features were a little unbended, by this acknowledgment of his vigour; and he thus proceeded in a leſs outrageous ſtrain —'They make a damned noiſe about this engagement with the French; but, egad! it was no more than a bum-boat battle, in compariſon with ſome that I have ſeen. There was old Rook, and Jennings, and another whom I'll be damned before I name, that knew what fighting was. As for my own ſhare, d'ye ſee, I am none of thoſe that hallo in their own commendation: but if ſo be that I were minded to ſtand my own trumpeter, ſome of thoſe little fellows that hold their heads ſo high, would be taken all aback, as the ſaying is; they would be aſhamed to ſhew their colours, d—n my eyes! I once lay eight glaſſes along-ſide of the *Flour de Louſe*, a French man of war, though her metal was much heavier, and her complement larger by a hundred hands than mine. You, Jack Hatchway, d—n ye, what d'ye grin at? D'ye think I tell a ſtory, becauſe you never heard it before?'

'Why, look ye, Sir,' anſwered the lieutenant, 'I am gland to find you can ſtand your own trumpeter, on occaſion: thof I wiſh you would change the tune; for that is the ſame you have been piping every watch for theſe ten months paſt. Tunley himſelf will tell you, he has heard it five hundred times.'—'God forgive you, Mr. Hatchway,' ſaid the landlord, interrupting him; 'as I'm an honeſt man and a houſekeeper, I never heard a ſyllable of the matter.'

This declaration, though not ſtrictly true, was extremely agreeable to Mr. Trunnion, who, with an air of triumph, obſerved—'Aha! Jack, I thought I ſhould bring you up, with your gibes and your jokes; but, ſuppoſe you had heard it before, is that any reaſon why it ſhouldn't be told to another perſon? There's the ſtranger; belike he has heard it five hundred times

too

too—han't you, brother?' addreſſing himſelf to Mr. Pickle; who, replying with a look expreſſing curioſity —'No, never;' he thus went on: "Well, you ſeem to be an honeſt, quiet ſort of a man; and therefore you muſt know, as I ſaid before, I fell in with a French man of war, Cape Finiſterre bearing about ſix leagues on the weather-bow, and the chace three leagues to leeward, going before the wind: whereupon I ſet my ſtudding ſails, and coming up with her, hoiſted my jack and enſign, and poured in a whole broadſide, before you could count three ratlins in the mizen ſhrouds; for I always keep a good look-out, and love to have the firſt fire.'—'That I'll be ſworn,' ſaid Hatchway: 'for the day we made the triumph, you ordered the men to fire when ſhe was hull to, by the ſame token we below pointed the guns at a flight of gulls; and I won a cann of punch from the gunner by killing the firſt bird.' Exaſperated at this ſarcaſm, he replied, with great vehemence, 'You lye, lubber! d—n your bones! what buſineſs have you to come always athwart my hauſe in this manner?—You, Pipes, was upon deck, and can bear witneſs, whether or not I fired too ſoon. Speak, you blood of a ——, and that upon the word of a ſeaman: how did the chace bear off us, when I gave orders to fire?'

Pipes, who had hitherto ſat ſilent, being thus called upon to give his evidence, after diverſe ſtrange geſticulations, opened his mouth like a gaſping cod, and with a cadence like that of the eaſt-wind ſinging through a cranny, pronounced, 'Half a quarter of a league right upon our lee-beam.'—'Nearer, you porpuſs-fac'd ſwab!' cried the commodore; 'nearer by twelve fathom: but, howſomever, that's enough to prove the falſhood of Hatchway's jaw—and ſo, brother, d'ye ſee,' turning to Mr. Pickle, 'I lay along-ſide of the *Flour de Louſe*, yard-arm and yard-arm, plying our great guns and ſmall arms, and heaving in ſtink-pots, powder-bottles, and hand-grenades, till our ſhot was all expended, double-headed, partridge, and grape:

then we loaded with iron crows, marlin-ſpikes, and old nails; but finding the Frenchman took a great deal of drubbing, and that he had ſhot away all our rigging, and killed and wounded a great number of our men, d'ye ſee! I reſolved to run him on board upon his quarter; and ſo ordered our grapplings to be got ready: but Monſieur perceiving what we were about, filled his topſails, and ſheered off; leaving us like a log upon the water, and our ſcuppers running with blood.'

Mr. Pickle and the landlord paid ſuch extraordinary attention to the rehearſal of this exploit, that Trunnion was encouraged to entertain them with more ſtories of the ſame nature; after which he obſerved, by way of encomium on the government, that all he had gained in the ſervice was a lame foot, and the loſs of an eye. The lieutenant, who could not find in his heart to loſe any opportunity of being witty at the expence of his commander, gave a looſe to his ſatirical talent once more; ſaying, 'I have heard as how you came by your lame foot, by having your upper decks overſtowed with liquor, whereby you became crank, and rolled, d'ye ſee, in ſuch a manner, that by a pich of the ſhip, your ſtarboard heel was jammed in one of the ſcuppers; and as for the matter of your eye, that was knocked out by your own crew when the Lightning was paid off. There's poor Pipes, who was beaten into all the colours of the rainbow, for taking your part, and giving you time to ſheer off; and I don't find as how you have rewarded him according as he deſerves.' As the commodore could not deny the truth of theſe anecdotes, however unſeaſonably they were introduced, he affected to receive them with good humour, as jokes of the lieutenant's own inventing; and replied, 'Aye, aye, Jack, every body knows your tongue is no ſlander; but, howſomever, I'll work you to an oil for this, you dog.' So ſaying, he lifted up one of his crutches, intending to lay it gently acroſs Mr. Hatchway's pate; but Jack, with great agility, tilted up his wooden leg, with which he

he warded off the blow, to the no ſmall admiration of Mr. Pickle, and utter aſtoniſhment of the landlord; who, by the bye, had expreſſed the ſame amazement, at the ſame feat, at the ſame hour, every night for three months before. Trunnion then directing his eye to the boatſwain's mate, 'You, Pipes,' ſaid he, 'do you go about and tell people that I did not reward you for ſtanding by me when I was huſſled by theſe rebellious rapſcallions; d—n ye! ha'n't you been rated on the books ever ſince?' Tom, who indeed had no words to ſpare, ſat ſmoaking his pipe with great indifference, and never dreamed of paying any regard to theſe interrogations, which being repeated and reinforced with many oaths, that however produced no effect, the commodore pulled out his purſe, ſaying, 'Here, you bitch's baby, here's ſomething better than a ſmart ticket!' and threw it at his ſilent deliverer, who received and pocketed his bounty, without the leaſt demonſtration of ſurprize or ſatisfaction; while the donor turning to Mr. Pickle, 'You ſee, brother,' ſaid he, 'I make good the old ſaying; we ſailors get money like horſes, and ſpend it like aſſes. Come, Pipes, let's have the boatſwain's whiſtle, and be jovial.' This muſician accordingly applied to his mouth the ſilver inſtrument that hung at a button-hole of his jacket, by a chain of the ſame metal, and though not quite ſo raviſhing as the pipe of Hermes, produced a ſound ſo loud and ſhrill, that the ſtranger (as it were inſtinctively) ſtopped his ears, to preſerve his organs of hearing from ſuch a dangerous invaſion. The prelude being thus executed, Pipes fixed his eyes upon the egg of an oſtrich that depended from the cieling, and without once moving them from that object, performed the whole cantata in a tone of voice that ſeemed to be the joint iſſue of an Iriſh bagpipe and a ſow-gelder's horn; the commodore, the lieutenant, and landlord, joined in the chorus, repeating this elegant ſtanza:

'Buſtle, buſtle, brave boys!
'Let us ſing, let us toil,

'And drink all the while—
'Since labour's the price of our joys.'

The third line was no ſooner pronounced, than the cann was lifted to every man's mouth with admirable uniformity; and the next word taken up at the end of their draught with a twang equally expreſſive and harmonious. In ſhort, the company began to underſtand one another; Mr. Pickle ſeemed to reliſh the entertainment, and a correſpondence immediately commenced between him and Trunnion, who ſhook him by the hand, drank to farther acquaintance, and even invited him to a meſs of pork and peas in the garriſon. The compliment was returned, good fellowſhip prevailed, and the night was pretty far advanced, when the merchant's man arrived with a lanthorn to light his maſter home; upon which the new friends parted, after a mutual promiſe of meeting next evening in the ſame place.

CHAP. III.

Mrs. Grizzle exerts herſelf in finding a proper Match for her Brother; who is accordingly introduced to the young Lady, whom he marries in due Seaſon.

I HAVE been the more circumſtantial in opening the character of Trunnion, becauſe he bears a conſiderable ſhare in the courſe of theſe memoirs; but now it is high time to reſume the conſideration of Mrs. Grizzle, who, ſince her arrival in the country, had been engroſſed by a double care; namely, that of finding a ſuitable match for her brother, and a comfortable yoke-fellow for herſelf.

Neither was this aim the reſult of any ſiniſter or frail ſuggeſtion, but the pure dictates of that laudable ambition, which prompted her to the preſervation of the family name. Nay, ſo diſintereſted was ſhe in this purſuit, that, poſtponing her neareſt cóncern, or at leaſt leaving her own fate to the ſilent operation of her charms, ſhe laboured with ſuch indefatigable zeal in behalf of her brother, that before they had been three months ſettled in the country, the general topick of converſation

converſation in the neighbourhood, was an intended match between the rich Mr. Pickle and the fair Miſs Appleby, daughter of a gentleman who lived in the next pariſh, and who, though he had but little fortune to beſtow upon his children, had (to uſe his own phraſe) repleniſhed their veins with ſome of the richeſt blood in the country.

This young lady, whoſe character and diſpoſition Mrs. Grizzle had inveſtigated to her own ſatisfaction, was deſtined for the ſpouſe of Mr. Pickle, and an overture accordingly made to her father; who being overjoyed at the propoſal, gave his conſent without heſitation, and even recommended an immediate execution of the project with ſuch eagerneſs, as ſeemed to indicate either a ſuſpicion of Mr. Pickle's conſtancy, or a diffidence of his own daughter's complexion, which, perhaps, he thought too ſanguine to keep much longer cool. The previous point being thus ſettled, our merchant, at the inſtigation of Mrs. Grizzle, went to viſit his future father-in-law, and was introduced to the daughter, with whom he had, that ſame afternoon, an opportunity of being alone. What paſſed in that interview, I never could learn; though, from the character of the ſuitor, the reader may juſtly conclude, that ſhe was not much teazed with the impertinence of his addreſſes. He was not, I believe, the leſs welcome for that reaſon: certain it is, ſhe made no objection to his taciturnity; and when her father communicated his reſolution, acquieſced with the moſt pious reſignation. But Mrs. Grizzle, in order to give the lady a more favourable idea of his intellects than what his converſation could poſſibly inſpire, was reſolved to dictate a letter, which her brother ſhould tranſcribe and tranſmit to his miſtreſs, as the produce of his own underſtanding; and had actually compoſed a very tender billet for this purpoſe; yet her intention was entirely fruſtrated by the miſapprehenſion of the lover himſelf; who, in conſequence of his ſiſter's repeated admonitions, anticipated her ſcheme, by writing for himſelf,

and diſpatching the letter one afternoon, while Mrs. Grizzle was viſiting at the parſon's.

Neither was this ſtep the effect of his vanity or precipitation; but having been often aſſured by his ſiſter, that it was abſolutely neceſſary for him to make a declaration of his love in writing, he took this opportunity of acting in conformity with her advice, when his imagination was unengaged or undiſturbed by any other ſuggeſtion, without ſuſpecting in the leaſt that ſhe intended to ſave him the trouble of exerciſing his own genius. Left, therefore, as he imagined, to his own inventions, he ſat down and produced the following morceau, which was tranſmitted to Miſs Appleby, before his ſiſter and counſellor had the leaſt intimation of the affair.

'MISS SALLY APPLEBY.

'MADAM,

'UNDERSTANDING you have a parcel 'of heart, warranted ſound, to be diſpoſed of, ſhall be 'willing to treat for ſaid commodity, on reaſonable 'terms; doubt not, ſhall agree for ſame; ſhall wait of 'you for farther information, when and where you ſhall 'appoint. This the needful from yours, &c.

'GAM. PICKLE.'

This laconic epiſtle, ſimple and unadorned as it was, met with as cordial a reception from the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, as if it had been couched in the moſt elegant terms that delicacy of paſſion and cultivated genius could ſupply; nay, I believe, was the more welcome on account of its mercantile plainneſs; becauſe, when an advantageous match is in view, a ſenſible woman often conſiders the flowery profeſſions and rapturous exclamations of love, as enſnaring ambiguities, or at beſt impertinent preliminaries, that retard the treaty they are deſigned to promote; whereas Mr. Pickle removed all diſagreeable uncertainty, by deſcending at once to the moſt intereſting particular.

She had no ſooner, as a dutiful child, communicated this billet-doux to her father, than he, as a careful parent,

rent, viſited Mr. Pickle, and in preſence of Mrs. Grizzle, demanded a formal explanation of his ſentiments with regard to his daughter Sally. Mr. Gamaliel, without any ceremony, aſſured him he had a reſpect for the young woman, and, with his good leave, would take her for better for worſe. Mr. Appleby, after having expreſſed his ſatisfaction that he had fixed his affections in his family, comforted the lover with the aſſurance of his being agreeable to the young lady, and they forthwith proceeded to the articles of the marriage-ſettlement; which being diſcuſſed and determined, a lawyer was ordered to engroſs them, the wedding cloaths were bought, and, in ſhort, a day was appointed for the celebration of their nuptials, to which every body of any faſhion in the neighbourhood was invited. Among theſe, Commodore Trunnion and Mr. Hatchway were not forgotten, being the ſole companions of the bridegroom, with whom, by this time, they had contracted a ſort of intimacy at their nocturnal rendezvous.

They had received a previous intimation of what was on the anvil, from the landlord, before Mr. Pickle thought proper to declare himſelf; in conſequence of which, the topick of the one-eyed commander's diſcourſe, at their meeting for ſeveral evenings before, had been the folly and plague of matrimony; on which he held forth with great vehemence of abuſe, levelled at the fair-ſex, whom he repreſented as devils incarnate, ſent from hell to torment mankind; and in particular, inveighed againſt old maids, for whom he ſeemed to entertain a ſingular averſion; while his friend Jack confirmed the truth of all his allegations, and gratified his own malignant vein at the ſame time, by clenching every ſentence with a ſly joke upon the married ſtate, built upon ſome alluſion to a ſhip, or ſea-faring life. He compared a woman to a great gun loaded with fire, brimſtone, and noiſe, which being violently heated, will bounce and fly, and play the devil, if you don't take ſpecial care of her breechings. He

ſaid,

ſaid, ſhe was like a hurricane, that never blows from one quarter, but veers about to all points of the compaſs. He likened her to a painted galley curiouſly rigged, with a leak in her hold, which her huſband would never be able to ſtop. He obſerved that her inclinations were like the Bay of Biſcay; for why? becauſe you may heave your deep ſea lead long enough, without ever reaching the bottom. That he who comes to anchor on a wife, may find himſelf moored in damned foul ground, and after all, can't for his blood ſlip his cable; and that for his own part, thof he might make ſhort trips for paſtime, he would never embark in woman on the voyage of life, becauſe he was afraid of foundering in the firſt foul weather.

In all probability, theſe inſinuations made ſome impreſſion on the mind of Mr. Pickle, who was not very much inclined to run great riſks of any kind; but the injunctions and importunities of his ſiſter, who was bent upon the match, over-balanced the opinion of his ſea-friends, who finding him determined to marry, notwithſtanding all the hints of caution they had thrown out, reſolved to accept his invitation, and honoured his nuptials with their preſence accordingly.

CHAP. IV.

The Behaviour of Mrs. Grizzle at the Wedding, with an Account of the Gueſts.

I HOPE it will not be thought uncharitable, if I advance, by way of conjecture, that Mrs. Grizzle, on this grand occaſion, ſummoned her whole exertion to play off the artillery of her charms upon the ſingle gentlemen who were invited to the entertainment: ſure I am, ſhe diſplayed to the beſt advantage all the engaging qualities ſhe poſſeſſed. Her affability at dinner was altogether uncommon; her attention to the gueſts was ſuperfluouſly hoſpitable; her tongue was ſheathed with a moſt agreeable and infantine liſp; her addreſs was perfectly obliging; and though, conſcious of the extraordinary capacity of her mouth, ſhe would not venture to hazard a laugh, ſhe modelled her lips into an

an enchanting ſimper, which played upon her countenance all day long; nay, ſhe even profited by that defect in her viſion we have already obſerved, and ſecurely contemplated thoſe features which were moſt to her liking, while the reſt of the company believed her regards were diſpoſed in a quite contrary direction. With what humility of complaiſance did ſhe receive the compliments of thoſe who could not help praiſing the elegance of the banquet; and how piouſly did ſhe ſeize that opportunity of commemorating the honours of her ſire, by obſerving, that it was no merit in her to underſtand ſomething of entertainments, as ſhe had occaſion to preſide at ſo many during the mayoralty of her papa. Far from diſcovering the leaſt ſymptom of pride and exultation when the opulence of her family became the ſubject of converſation, ſhe aſſumed a ſeverity of countenance; and after having moralized on the vanity of riches, declared that thoſe who looked upon her as a fortune, were very much miſtaken; for her father had left her no more than poor five thouſand pounds, which, with what little ſhe had ſaved of the intereſt ſince his death, was all ſhe had to depend upon: indeed, if ſhe had placed her chief felicity in wealth, ſhe ſhould not have been ſo forward in deſtroying her own expectations, by adviſing and promoting that event at which they were now ſo happily aſſembled; but ſhe hoped ſhe ſhould always have virtue enough to poſtpone any intereſted conſideration, when it ſhould happen to claſh with the happineſs of her friends. Finally, ſuch was her modeſty and ſelf-denial, that ſhe induſtriouſly informed thoſe whom it might concern, that ſhe was no leſs than three years older than the bride; though, had ſhe added ten to the reckoning, ſhe would have committed no miſtake in point of computation.

To contribute as much as lay in her power to the ſatisfaction of all preſent, ſhe in the afternoon regaled them with a tune on the harpſichord, accompanied with her voice, which, though not the moſt melodious in the world, I dare ſay, would have been equally at their
ſervice,

fervice, could fhe have vied with Philomel in fong; and as the laft effort of her complaifance, when dancing was propofed, fhe was prevailed upon, at the requeft of her new fifter, to open the ball in perfon.

In a word, Mrs. Grizzle was the principal figure in this feftival, and almoft eclipfed the bride; who, far from feeming to difpute the pre-eminence, very wifely allowed her to make the beft of her talents; contenting herfelf with the lot to which fortune had already called her, and which fhe imagined would not be the lefs defirable, if her fifter-in-law were detached from the family.

I believe I need fcarce advertife the reader, that during this whole entertainment, the commodore and his lieutenant were quite out of their element; and this indeed was the cafe with the bridegroom himfelf, who being utterly unacquainted with any fort of polite commerce, found himfelf under a very difagreeable reftraint during the whole fcene.

Trunnion, who had fcarce ever been on fhore till he was paid off, and never once in his whole life in the company of any females above the rank of thofe who herd upon the Point at Portfmouth, was more embarraffed about his behaviour than if he had been furrounded at fea by the whole French navy. He had never pronounced the word *Madam* fince he was born; fo that far from entering into converfation with the ladies, he would not even return the compliment, or give the leaft nod of civility when they drank to his health; and I verily believe, would rather have fuffered fuffocation than allowed the fimple phrafe, *your fervant*, to proceed from his mouth. He was altogether as inflexible with refpect to the attitudes of his body; for either through obftinacy or bafhfulnefs, he fat upright without motion, infomuch, that he provoked the mirth of a certain wag, who addreffing himfelf to the lieutenant, afked whether that was the commodore himfelf, or the wooden lion that ufed to ftand at his gate: an image, to which, it muft be owned, Mr. Trunnion's perfon bore no faint refemblance. Mr.

Mr. Hatchway, who was not quite ſo unpoliſhed as the commodore, and had certain notions that ſeemed to approach the ideas of common life, made a leſs uncouth appearance; but then he was a wit, and though of a very peculiar genius, partook largely of that diſpoſition which is common to all wits, who never enjoy themſelves, except when their talents meet with thoſe marks of diſtinction and veneration, which (in their own opinion) they deſerve.

The circumſtances being premiſed, it is not to be wondered at, if this triumvirate made no objection to the propoſal, when ſome of the grave perſonages of the company made a motion for adjourning into another apartment, where they might enjoy their pipes and bottles, while the young folks indulged themſelves in the continuance of their own favourite diverſion. Thus reſcued, as it were, from a ſtate of annihilation, the firſt uſe the two lads of the caſtle made of their exiſtence, was to ply the bridegroom ſo hard with bumpers, that in leſs than an hour he made divers efforts to ſing, and ſoon after was carried to bed, deprived of all manner of ſenſation, to the utter diſappointment of the bride-men and maids, who, by this accident, were prevented from throwing the ſtocking, and performing certain other ceremonies practiſed on ſuch occaſions. As for the bride, ſhe bore this misfortune with great good-humour; and, indeed, on all occaſions, behaved like a diſcreet woman, perfectly well acquainted with the nature of her own ſituation.

CHAP. V.

Mrs. Pickle aſſumes the Reins of Government in her own Family. Her Siſter-in-law undertakes an Enterprize of great Moment, but is for ſome Time diverted from her Purpoſe by a very intereſting Conſideration.

WHATEVER deference, not to ſay ſubmiſſion, ſhe had paid to Mrs. Grizzle before ſhe was ſo nearly allied to her family, ſhe no ſooner became Mrs. Pickle, than ſhe thought it incumbent upon her to act up to the dignity of the character; and the very day after the

 marriage,

marriage, ventured to diſpute with her ſiſter-in-law on the ſubject of her own pedigree, which ſhe affirmed to be more honourable in all reſpects than that of her huſband; obſerving, that ſeveral younger brothers of her houſe had arrived at the ſtation of Lord Mayor of London, which was the higheſt pitch of greatneſs that any of Mr. Pickle's predeceſſors had ever attained.

This preſumption was like a thunderbolt to Mrs. Grizzle, who began to perceive that ſhe had not ſucceeded quite ſo well as ſhe imagined, in ſelecting for her brother a gentle and obedient yoke-fellow, who would always treat her with that profound reſpect which ſhe thought due to her ſuperior genius, and be entirely regulated by her advice and direction: however, ſhe ſtill continued to manage the reins of government in the houſe, reprehending the ſervants as uſual; an office ſhe performed with great capacity, and in which ſhe ſeemed to take ſingular delight, until Mrs. Pickle, on pretence of conſulting her eaſe, told her one day ſhe would take that trouble upon herſelf, and for the future aſſume the management of her own family. Nothing could be more mortifying to Mrs. Grizzle than ſuch a declaration; to which, after a conſiderable pauſe, and ſtrange diſtortion of look, ſhe replied, 'I ſhall never refuſe or repine at any trouble that may conduce to my brother's advantage.'—'Dear Madam,' anſwered the ſiſter, 'I am infinitely obliged to your kind concern for Mr. Pickle's intereſt, which I conſider as my own; but I cannot bear to ſee you a ſufferer by your friendſhip, and therefore inſiſt upon exempting you from the fatigue you have borne ſo long.'

In vain did the other proteſt that ſhe took pleaſure in the taſk; Mrs. Pickle aſcribed the aſſurance to her exceſs of complaiſance, and expreſſed ſuch tenderneſs of zeal for her dear ſiſter's health and tranquillity, that the reluctant maiden found herſelf obliged to reſign her authority, without enjoying the leaſt pretext for complaining of her being depoſed.

This diſgrace was attended by a fit of peeviſh devotion

tion that laſted three or four weeks; during which period, ſhe had the additional chagrin of ſeeing the young lady gain an abſolute aſcendancy over the mind of her brother, who was perſuaded to ſet up a gay equipage, and improve his houſe-keeping, by an augmentation in his expence, to the amount of a thouſand a year at leaſt: though his alteration in the œconomy of his houſehold effected no change in his own diſpoſition, or manner of life; for as ſoon as the painful ceremony of receiving and returning viſits was performed, he had recourſe again to the company of his ſea-friends, with whom he ſpent the beſt part of his time. But if he was ſatisfied with his condition, the caſe was otherwiſe with Mrs. Grizzle, who finding her importance in the family greatly diminiſhed, her attractions neglected by all the male-ſex in the neighbourhood, and the withering hand of time hang threatening over her head, began to feel the horror of eternal virginity; and, in a ſort of deſperation, reſolved at any rate to reſcue herſelf from that reproachful and uncomfortable ſituation. Thus determined, ſhe formed a plan, the execution of which, to a ſpirit leſs enterprizing and ſufficient than her's, would have appeared altogether impracticable; this was no other, than to make a conqueſt of the commodore's heart; which the reader will eaſily believe was not very ſuſceptible of tender impreſſions; but, on the contrary, fortified with inſenſibility and prejudice againſt the charms of the whole ſex; and particularly prepoſſeſſed to the prejudice of that claſs diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of old-maids, in which Mrs. Grizzle was, by this time, unhappily ranked. She, nevertheleſs, took the field; and having inveſted this ſeemingly impregnable fortreſs, began to break ground one day, when Trunnion dined at her brother's, by ſpringing certain enſnaring commendations on the honeſty and ſincerity of ſea-faring people, paying a particular attention to his plate, and affecting a ſimper of approbation at every thing he ſaid, which by any means ſhe could conſtrue into a joke, or with modeſty be ſup-

posed to hear: nay, even when he left decency on the left-hand, (which was often the case) she ventured to reprimand his freedom of speech with a gracious grin, saying, 'Sure, you gentlemen belonging to the sea have such an odd way with you!' But all this complacency was so ineffectual, that, far from suspecting the true cause of it, the commodore, that very evening, at the club, in presence of her brother, with whom, by this time, he could take any manner of freedom, did not scruple to damn her for a squinting, block-faced, chattering piss-kitchen; and immediately after, drank despair to all old maids. The toast Mr. Pickle pledged without the least hesitation, and next day intimated to his sister, who bore the indignity with surprizing resignation, and did not therefore desist from her scheme, unpromising as it seemed to be, until her attention was called off, and engaged in another care, which, for some time, interrupted the progress of this design. Her sister had not been married many months, when she exhibited evident symptoms of pregnancy, to the general satisfaction of all concerned, and the inexpressible joy of Mrs. Grizzle, who (as we have already hinted) was more interested in the preservation of the family-name, than in any other consideration whatever. She therefore no sooner discovered appearances to justify and confirm her hopes, that postponing her own purpose, and laying aside that pique and resentment she had conceived from the behaviour of Mrs. Pickle, when she superseded her authority; or, perhaps, considering her in no other light than that of the vehicle which contained, and was destined to convey her brother's heir to light; she determined to exert her uttermost in nursing, tending, and cherishing her, during the term of her important charge. With this view, she purchased Culpepper's Midwifery; which, with that sagacious performance, dignified with Aristotle's name, she studied with indefatigable care, and diligently perused the Compleat Housewife, together with Quincy's Dispensatory; culling every jelly, marmalade, and conserve, which

these

these authors recommend as either salutary or toothsome, for the benefit and comfort of her sister-in-law, during her gestation. She restricted her from eating roots, pot-herbs, fruit, and all sorts of vegetables: and one day, when Mrs. Pickle had plucked a peach with her own hand, and was in the very act of putting it between her teeth, Mrs. Grizzle perceived the rash attempt and running up to her, fell upon her knees in the garden, intreating her, with tears in her eyes, to resist such a pernicious appetite. Her request was no sooner complied with, than, recollecting that if her sister's longing was baulked, the child might be affected with some disagreeable mark, or deplorable disease, she begged as earnestly that she would swallow the fruit; and, in the mean time, ran for some cordial water of her own composing, which she forced upon her sister, as an antidote to the poison she had received.

This excessive zeal and tenderness did not fail to be very troublesome to Mrs. Pickle; who having revolved divers plans for the recovery of her own ease, at length determined to engage Mrs. Grizzle in such employment as would interrupt that close attendance which she found so teazing and disagreeable. Neither did she wait long for an opportunity of putting her resolution in practice. The very next day, a gentleman happening to dine with Mr. Pickle, unfortunately mentioned a pine-apple, part of which he had eaten a week before at the house of a nobleman who lived in another part of the country, at the distance of a hundred miles at least.

The name of this fatal fruit was no sooner pronounced, than Mrs. Grizzle, who incessently watched her sister's looks, took the alarm, because she thought they gave certain indications of curiosity and desire; and after having observed that she herself could never eat pine-apples, which were altogether unnatural productions, extorted by the force of artificial fire, out of filthy manure, asked, with a faultering voice, if Mrs. Pickle was not of her way of thinking. This young lady,

who wanted neither ſlyneſs nor penetration, at once divined her meaning; and replied, with ſeeming unconcern, that for her own part, ſhe ſhould never repine, if there was not a pine-apple in the univerſe, provided ſhe could indulge herſelf with the fruits of her own country.

This anſwer was calculated for the benefit of the ſtranger, who would certainly have ſuffered for his imprudence by the reſentment of Mrs. Grizzle, had her ſiſter expreſſed the leaſt reliſh for the fruit in queſtion. It had the deſired effect, and re-eſtabliſhed the peace of the company, which was not a little endangered by the gentleman's want of conſideration. Next morning, however, after breakfaſt, the pregnant lady, in purſuance of her plan, yawned (as it were by accident) full in the face of her maiden ſiſter; who being infinitely diſturbed by this convulſion, affirmed it was a ſymptom of longing, and inſiſted upon knowing the object in deſire; when Mrs. Pickle, affecting an affected ſmile, told her ſhe had eaten a moſt delicious pine-apple in her ſleep. This declaration was attended with an immediate ſcream uttered by Mrs. Grizzle; who inſtantly perceiving her ſiſter ſurprized at the exclamation, claſped her in her arms, and aſſured her, with a ſort of hyſterical laugh, that ſhe could not help ſcreaming with joy, becauſe ſhe had it in her power to gratify her dear ſiſter's wiſh: a lady in the neighbourhood having promiſed to ſend her, in a preſent, a couple of delicate pine-apples, which ſhe would that very day go in queſt of.

Mrs. Pickle would by no means conſent to this propoſal, on pretence of ſparing the other unneceſſary fatigue; and aſſured her, that if ſhe had any deſire to eat a pine-apple, it was ſo faint, that the diſappointment could produce no bad conſequence. But this aſſurance was conveyed in a manner, (which ſhe knew very well how to adopt) that, inſtead of diſſuading, rather ſtimulated Mrs. Grizzle to ſet out immediately; not on a viſit to that lady, whoſe promiſe ſhe herſelf had feigned, with a view of conſulting her ſiſter's tranquillity, but

on

on a random ſearch through the whole country for this unlucky fruit, which was like to produce ſo much vexation and prejudice to her and her father's houſe.

During three whole days and nights did ſhe, attended by a valet, ride from place to place without ſucceſs, unmindful of her health, and careleſs of her reputation, that began to ſuffer from the nature of her enquiry, which was purſued with ſuch peculiar eagerneſs and diſtraction, that every body with whom ſhe converſed, looked upon her as an unhappy perſon, whoſe intellects were not a little diſordered.

Baffled in all her reſearches within the county, ſhe at length reſolved to viſit that very nobleman, at whoſe houſe the officious ſtranger had been (for her) ſo unfortunately regaled; and actually arrived in a poſt-chaiſe at the place of his habitation; where ſhe introduced her buſineſs as an affair on which the happineſs of a whole family depended. By virtue of a preſent to his lordſhip's gardener, ſhe procured the Heſperian fruit, with which ſhe returned in triumph.

CHAP. VI.

Mrs. Grizzle is indefatigable in gratifying her Siſter's longings. Peregrine is born, and managed contrary to the Directions and Remonſtrances of his Aunt, who is diſguſted upon that Account, and reſumes the Plan which ſhe had before rejected.

THE ſucceſs of this device would have encouraged Mrs. Pickle to practiſe more of the ſame ſort upon her ſiſter-in-law, had ſhe not been deterred by a violent fever which ſeized her zealous ally, in conſequence of the fatigue and uneaſineſs ſhe had undergone; which, while it laſted, as effectually conduced to her repoſe, as any other ſtratagem ſhe could invent. But Mrs. Grizzle's health was no ſooner reſtored, than the other, being as much incommoded as ever, was obliged, in her own defence, to have recourſe to ſome other contrivance; and managed her artifices in ſuch a manner, as leaves it at this day a doubt whether ſhe was really ſo

whimſical

whimſical and capricious in her appetites as ſhe herſelf pretended to be; for her longings were not reſtricted to the demands of the palate and ſtomach, but alſo affected all the other organs of ſenſe, and even invaded her imagination, which at this period ſeemed to be ſtrangely diſeaſed.

One time ſhe longed to pinch her huſband's ear; and it was with infinite difficulty that his ſiſter could prevail upon him to undergo the operation. Yet this taſk was eaſy, in compariſon with another ſhe undertook for the gratification of Mrs. Pickle's unaccountable deſire; which was no other than to perſuade the commodore to ſubmit his chin to the mercy of the big-bellied lady, who ardently wiſhed for an opportunity of plucking three black hairs from his beard. When this propoſal was firſt communicated to Mr. Trunnion by the huſband, his anſwer was nothing but a dreadful effuſion of oaths, accompanied with ſuch a ſtare, and delivered in ſuch a tone of voice, as terrified the poor beſeecher into immediate ſilence; ſo that Mrs. Grizzle was fain to take the whole enterprize upon herſelf, and next day went to the garriſon accordingly, where having obtained entrance by means of the lieutenant, who, while his commander was aſleep, ordered her to be admitted for the joke's ſake, ſhe waited patiently till he turned out, and then accoſted him in the yard, where he uſed to perform his morning walk. He was thunderſtruck at the appearance of a woman in a place which he had hitherto kept ſacred from the whole ſex, and immediately began to utter an apoſtrophe to Tom Pipes, whoſe turn it then was to watch; when Mrs. Grizzle falling on her knees before him, conjured him with many pathetic ſupplications, to hear and grant her requeſt; which was no ſooner ſignified, than he bellowed in ſuch an outrageous manner that the whole court re-echoed the opprobrious term *bitch*, and the word *damnation*, which he repeated with ſurprizing volubility, without any ſort of propriety or connection; and retreated into his penetralia, leaving the baffled devotee

in

in the humble posture she had so unsuccessfully chosen to melt his obdurate heart.

Mortifying as this repulse must have been to a lady of her stately disposition, she did not relinquish her aim, but endeavoured to interest the commodore's counsellors and adherents in her cause. With this view she solicited the interest of Mr. Hatchway, who, being highly pleased with a circumstance so productive of mirth and diversion, readily entered into her measures, and promised to employ his whole influence for her satisfaction: and as for the boatswain's mate, he was rendered propitious by the present of a guinea which she slipt into his hand. In short, Mrs. Grizzle was continually engaged in this negociation for the space of ten days, during which the commodore was so incessantly pestered with her remonstrances, and the admonitions of his associates, that he swore his people had a design upon his life, which becoming a burden to him, he at last complied, and was conducted to the scene like a victim to the altar; or rather like a reluctant bear, when he is led to the stake amidst the shouts and cries of butchers and their dogs. After all, this victory was not quite so decisive as the conquerors imagined; for the patient being set, and the performer prepared with a pair of pincers, a small difficulty occurred: she could not for some time discern one black hair on the whole superficies of Mr. Trunnion's face; when Mrs. Grizzle, very much alarmed and disconcerted, had recourse to a magnifying glass that stood upon her toilet; and after a most accurate examination, discovered a fibre of a dusky hue, to which the instrument being applied, Mrs. Pickle pulled it up by the roots, to the no small discomposure of the owner, who feeling the smart much more severe than he had expected, started up, and swore he would not part with another hair to save them all from damnation.

Mr. Hatchway exhorted him to patience and resignation, Mrs. Grizzle repeated her entreaties with great humility; but finding him deaf to all her prayers, and

absolutely

absolutely bent upon leaving the house, she clasped his knees, and begged for the love of God that he would have compassion upon a distressed family, and endure a little more for the sake of the poor infant, who would otherwise be born with a grey beard upon its chin. Far from being melted, he was rather exasperated by this reflection; to which he replied with great indignation—' D—n you for a yaw-sighted bitch! he'll be hanged long enough before he has any beard at all.' So saying, he disengaged himself from her embraces, flung out at the door, and hasted homewards with such surprizing speed, that the lieutenant could not overtake him until he had arrived at his own gate; and Mrs. Grizzle was so much affected with his escape, that her sister, in pure compassion, desired she would not afflict herself, protesting that her own wish was already gratified, for she had plucked three hairs at once, having, from the beginning, been dubious of the commodore's patience. But the labours of this assiduous kinswoman did not end with the atchievement of this adventure; her eloquence or industry was employed without ceasing, in the performance of other tasks imposed by the ingenious craft of her sister-in-law; who at another time conceived an insuppressible affection for a fricassee of frogs, which should be the genuine natives of France, so that there was a necessity for dispatching a messenger on purpose to that kingdom; but as she could not depend upon the integrity of any common servant, Mrs. Grizzle undertook that province, and actually set sail in a cutter of Bologne, from whence she returned in eight and forty hours with a tub full of those live animals; which being dressed according to art, her sister would not taste them, on pretence that her fit of longing was past. But then her inclinations took a different turn, and fixed themselves upon a curious implement belonging to a lady of quality in the neighbourhood, which was reported to be a very great curiosity; this was no other than a porcelain chamber-pot of admirable workmanship, contrived by the honourable

owner,

owner, who kept it for her own private ufe, and cherifhed it as an utenfil of ineftimable value.

Mrs. Grizzle fhuddered at the firft hint fhe received of her fifter's defire to poffefs this piece of furniture; becaufe fhe knew it was not to be purchafed; and the lady's character, which was none of the moft amiable in point of humanity and condefcenfion, forbade all hopes of borrowing it for a feafon: fhe therefore attempted to reafon down this capricious appetite, as an extravagance of imagination which ought to be combated and repreffed; and Mrs. Pickle, to all appearance, was convinced and fatisfied by her arguments and advice: but, neverthelefs, could make ufe of no other convenience, and was threatened with a very dangerous fuppreffion. Rouzed at the peril in which fhe fuppofed her to be, Mrs. Grizzle flew to the lady's houfe, and having obtained a private audience, difclofed the melancholy fituation of her fifter, and implored the benevolence of her ladyfhip; who, contrary to expectation, received her very gracioufly, and confented to indulge Mrs. Pickle's longing. Mr. Pickle began to be out of humour at the expence to which he was expofed by the caprice of his wife, who was herfelf alarmed at this laft accident, and for the future kept her fancy within bounds; infomuch, that without being fubject to any more extraordinary trouble, Mrs. Grizzle reaped the long-wifhed fruits of her deareft expectation in the birth of a fine boy, whom her fifter in a few months brought into the world.

I fhall omit the defcription of the rejoicings, which were infinite on this important occafion, and only obferve that Mrs. Pickle's mother and aunt ftood godmothers, and the commodore affifted at the ceremony as godfather to the child, who was chriftened by the name of Peregrine, in compliment to the memory of a deceafed uncle. While the mother was confined to her bed, and incapable of maintaining her own authority, Mrs. Grizzle took charge of the infant by a double claim; and fuperintended, with furprizing vigilance,

lance, the nurſe and midwife in all the particulars of their reſpective offices, which were performed by her expreſs direction. But no ſooner was Mrs. Pickle in a condition to re-aſſume the management of her own affairs, than ſhe thought proper to alter certain regulations concerning the child, which had obtained in conſequence of her ſiſter's orders; directing, among other innovations, that the bandages with which the infant had been ſo neatly rolled up, like an Egyptian mummy, ſhould be looſened and laid aſide, in order to rid nature of all reſtraint, and give the blood free ſcope to circulate; and with her own hands ſhe plunged him headlong every morning in a tub full of cold water. This operation ſeemed ſo barbarous to the tender-hearted Mrs. Grizzle, that ſhe not only oppoſed it with all her eloquence, ſhedding abundance of tears over the ſacrifice when it was made, but took horſe immediately, and departed for the habitation of an eminent country phyſician, whom ſhe conſulted in theſe words.—'Pray, doctor, is it not both dangerous and cruel to be the means of letting a poor tender infant periſh, by ſouſing it in water as cold as ice?'—'Yes,' replied the doctor, 'downright murder, I affirm.'—'I ſee you are a perſon of great learning and ſagacity,' ſaid the other: 'and I muſt beg you will be ſo good as to ſignify your opinion in your own hand-writing.' The doctor immediately complied with her requeſt, and expreſſed himſelf upon a ſlip of paper to this purpoſe.

'THESE are to certify whom it may concern, that 'I firmly believe, and it is my unalterable opinion, 'that whoſoever letteth an infant periſh, by ſouſing it in 'cold water, even though the ſaid water ſhould not be 'ſo cold as ice, is in effect guilty of the murder of the 'ſaid infant, as witneſs my hand,

'COMFIT COLYCYNTH.'

Having obtained this certificate, for which the phyſician was handſomely acknowledged, ſhe returned exulting, and hoping, with ſuch authority, to overthrow all

all oppoſition. Accordingly, next morning, when her nephew was about to undergo his diurnal baptiſm, ſhe produced the commiſſion, whereby ſhe conceived herſelf impowered to overule ſuch inhuman proceedings. But ſhe was diſappointed in her expectation, confident as it was; not that Mrs. Pickle pretended to differ in opinion from Dr. Colycynth, 'For whoſe character and ſentiments,' ſaid ſhe, 'I have ſuch veneration, that I ſhall carefully obſerve the caution implied in this very certificate, by which, far from condemning my method of practice, he only aſſerts that killing is murder; an aſſeveration, the truth of which, it is to be hoped, I ſhall never diſpute.'

Mrs. Grizzle, who, ſooth to ſay, had rather too ſuperficially conſidered the clauſe by which ſhe thought herſelf authorized, peruſed the paper with more accuracy, and was confounded at her own want of penetration. Yet though ſhe was confuted, ſhe was by no means convinced that her objections to the cold-bath were unreaſonable; on the contrary, after having beſtowed ſundry opprobrious epithets on the phyſician, for his want of knowledge and candour, ſhe proteſted in the moſt earneſt and ſolemn manner againſt the pernicious practice of dipping the child; a piece of cruelty which, with God's aſſiſtance, ſhe ſhould never ſuffer to be inflicted on her own iſſue; and waſhing her hands of the melancholy conſequence that would certainly enſue, ſhut herſelf up in her cloſet, to indulge her ſorrow and vexation. She was deceived, however, in her prognoſtick; the boy, inſtead of declining in point of health, ſeemed to acquire freſh vigour from every plunge, as if he had been reſolved to diſcredit the wiſdom and foreſight of his aunt, who, in all probability, could never forgive him for this want of reverence and reſpect. This conjecture is founded upon her behaviour to him in the ſequel of his infancy, during which ſhe was known to torture him more than once, when ſhe had opportunities of thruſting pins into his fleſh, without any danger of being detected. In a word, her affections were

in a little time altogether alienated from this hope of her family, whom ſhe abandoned to the conduct of his mother, whoſe province it undoubtedly was to manage the nurture of her own child; while ſhe herſelf reſumed her operations upon the commodore, whom ſhe was reſolved at any rate to captivate and enſlave. And it muſt be owned, that Mrs. Grizzle's knowledge of the human heart never ſhone ſo conſpicuous as in the methods ſhe purſued for the accompliſhment of this important aim.

Through the rough unpoliſhed huſk that caſed the ſoul of Trunnion, ſhe could eaſily diſtinguiſh a large ſhare of that vanity and ſelf-conceit that generally predominate even in the moſt ſavage breaſt; and to this ſhe conſtantly appealed. In his preſence ſhe always exclaimed againſt the craft and diſhoneſt diſſimulation of the world; and never failed of uttering particular invectives againſt thoſe arts of chicanery, in which the lawyers are ſo converſant to the prejudice and ruin of their fellow-creatures: obſerving, that in a ſea-faring life, ſo far as ſhe had opportunities of judging or being informed, there was nothing but friendſhip, ſincerity, and a hearty contempt for every thing that was mean or ſelfiſh.

This kind of converſation, with the aſſiſtance of certain particular civilities, inſenſibly made an impreſſion on the mind of the commodore; and that the more effectual, as his former prepoſſeſſions were built upon very ſlender foundations: his antipathy to old maids, which he had conceived upon hearſay, began gradually to diminiſh, when he found they were not quite ſuch infernal animals as they had been repreſented; and it was not long before he was heard to obſerve at the club, that Pickle's ſiſter had not ſo much of the core of bitch in her as he had imagined. This negative compliment, by the medium of her brother, ſoon reached the ears of Mrs. Grizzle, who, thus encouraged, redoubled all her arts and attention; ſo that in leſs than

three

three months after, he in the ſame place diſtinguiſhed her with the epithet of a damned ſenſible jade.

Hatchway taking the alarm at this declaration, which he feared foreboded ſomething fatal to his intereſt, told his commander with a ſneer, that ſhe had ſenſe enough to bring him to, under her ſtern; and he did not doubt but ſuch an old crazy veſſel would be the better for being taken in tow. 'But howſomever,' added this arch adviſer, 'I'd have you take care of your upper works; for if once you are made faſt to her poop, agad! ſhe'll ſpank it away, and make every beam in your body crack with ſtraining.' Our ſhe-projector's whole plan had like to have been ruined by the effect which this malicious hint had upon Trunnion, whoſe rage and ſuſpicion being wakened at once, his colour changed from tawny to a cadaverous pale, and then ſhifting to a deep and duſky red, ſuch as we ſometimes obſerve in the ſky when it is replete with thunder, he, after his uſual preamble of unmeaning oaths, anſwered in theſe words: 'D—n ye, you jury-legged dog, you would give all the ſtowage in your hold to be as ſound as I am; and as for being taken in tow, d'ye ſee, I am not ſo diſabled but that I can lie my courſe, and perform my voyage without any aſſiſtance; and, agad! no man ſhall ever ſee Hawſer Trunnion lagging a-ſtern in the wake of e'er a bitch in Chriſtendom.'

Mrs. Grizzle, who every morning interrogated her brother with regard to the ſubject of his night's converſation with his friends, ſoon received the unwelcome news of the commodore's averſion to matrimony; and juſtly imputing the greateſt part of his diſguſt to the ſatirical inſinuations of Mr. Hatchway, reſolved to level this obſtruction to her ſucceſs, and actually found means to intereſt him in her ſcheme. She had, indeed, on ſome occaſions, a particular knack at making converts, being probably not unacquainted with that grand ſyſtem of perſuaſion, which is adopted by the greateſt perſonages of the age, as fraught with maxims much more effectual than all the eloquence of Tully or De-

mosthenes, even when supported by the demonstrations of truth: besides, Mr. Hatchway's fidelity to his new ally was confirmed, by his foreseeing in his captain's marriage an infinite fund of gratification for his own cynical disposition. Thus, therefore, converted and properly cautioned, he, for the future, suppressed all the virulence of his wit against the matrimonial state; and as he knew not how to open his mouth in the positive praise of any person whatever, took all opportunities of excepting Mrs. Grizzle by name, from the censures he liberally bestowed upon the rest of her sex. 'She is not a drunkard, like Nan Castick of Deptford,' he would say; 'nor a nincompoop, like Peg Simper of Woolwich; not a brimstone, like Coddle of Chatham; nor a shrew, like Nell Griffin on the Point Portsmouth;' (ladies to whom, at different times, they had both paid their addresses;) 'but a tight, good-humoured, sensible wench, who knows very well how to box her compass; well trimmed aloft, and well sheathed alow, with a good cargo under her hatches.' The commodore at first imagined this commendation was ironical, but hearing it repeated again and again, was filled with astonishment at this surprizing change in the lieutenant's behaviour; and after a long fit of musing, concluded that Hatchway himself harboured a matrimonial design on the person of Mrs. Grizzle.

Pleased with this conjecture, he rallied Jack in his turn, and one night toasted her health as a compliment to his passion; a circumstance which the lady learned next day by the usual canal of her intelligence, and interpreting as the result of his own tenderness for her, she congratulated herself upon the victory she had obtained; and thinking it unnecessary to continue the reserve she had hitherto industriously affected, resolved from that day to sweeten her behaviour towards him with such a dish of affection, as could not fail to persuade him that he had inspired her with a reciprocal flame. In consequence of this determination, he was invited to dinner; and, while he staid, treated with

such

ſuch cloying proofs of her regard, that not only the reſt of the company, but even Trunnion himſelf, perceived her drift; and taking the alarm accordingly, could not help exclaiming, 'Oho! I ſee how the land lies; and if I don't weather the point, I'll be d—'d!' Having thus expreſſed himſelf to his afflicted inamorato, he made the beſt of his way to the garriſon, in which he ſhut himſelf up for the ſpace of ten days, and had no communication with his friends and domeſticks but by looks, which were moſt ſignificantly pictureſque.

CHAP. VII.

Divers Stratagems are invented and put in Practice in order to overcome the Obſtinacy of Trunnion, who at length is teazed and tortured into the Nooſe of Wedlock.

THIS abrupt departure, and unkind declaration, affected Mrs. Grizzle ſo much, that ſhe fell ſick of ſorrow and mortification: and after having confined herſelf to her bed for three days, ſent for her brother, told him ſhe perceived her end drawing near, and deſired that a lawyer might be brought, in order to write her laſt will. Mr. Pickle, ſurprized at her demand, began to act the part of a comforter, aſſuring her, that her diſtemper was not at all dangerous, and that he would inſtantly ſend for a phyſician, who would convince her that ſhe was in no manner of jeopardy; ſo that there was no occaſion at preſent to employ any officious attorney in ſuch a melancholy taſk. Indeed, this affectionate brother was of opinion, that a will was altogether ſuperfluous at any rate, as he himſelf was heir at law to his ſiſter's whole real and perſonal eſtate. But ſhe inſiſted upon his compliance with ſuch determined obſtinacy, that he could no longer reſiſt her importunities; and a ſcrivener arriving, ſhe dictated and executed her will; in which ſhe bequeathed to Commodore Trunnion one thouſand pounds, to purchaſe a mourning ring, which ſhe hoped he would wear as a pledge of her friendſhip and affection. Her brother, though he did not much reliſh this teſtimony of her

love, neverthelefs, that fame evening, gave an account of this particular to Mr. Hatchway, who was alfo, as Mr. Pickle affured him, generoufly remembered by the teftatrix.

The lieutenant, fraught with this piece of intelligence, watched for an opportunity, and as foon as he perceived the commodore's features a little unbended from that ferocious contraction they had retained fo long, ventured to inform him, that Pickle's fifter lay at the point of death, and that fhe had left him a thoufand pounds in her will. This piece of news overwhelmed him with confufion; and Mr. Hatchway imputing his filence to remorfe, refolved to take advantage of that favourable moment, and counfelled him to go and vifit the poor young woman, who was dying for love of him. But his admonition happened to be fomewhat unfeafonable; for Trunnion no fooner heard him mention the caufe of her diforder, than his morofity recurring, he burft out into a violent fit of curfing, and forthwith betook himfelf again to his hammock, where he lay uttering, in a low growling tone of voice, a repetition of oaths and imprecations, for the fpace of four and twenty hours, without ceafing. This was a delicious meal to the lieutenant; who, eager to inhance the pleafure of the entertainment, and at the fame time conduce to the fuccefs of the caufe he had efpoufed, invented a ftratagem, the execution of which had all the effect he could defire. He prevailed upon Pipes, who was devoted to his fervice, to get upon the top of the chimney belonging to the commodore's chamber, at midnight, and to lower down by a rope a bunch of ftinking whitings, which being performed, he put a fpeaking-trumpet to his mouth, and hollowed down the vent, in a voice like a thunder, 'Trunnion! Trunnion! turn out and be fpliced, or lie ftill and be damned!' This dreadful note, the terror of which was increafed by the filence and darknefs of the night, as well as the echo of the paffage through which it was conveyed, no fooner reached the ears of the aftonifhed commodore, than

than turning his eye towards the place from whence this folemn addrefs feemed to proceed, he beheld a glittering object that vanifhed in an inftant. Juft as his fuperftitious fear had improved the apparition into fome fupernatural meffenger cloathed in fhining array, his opinion was confirmed by a fudden explofion, which he took for thunder, though it was no other than the noife of a piftol fired down the chimney by the boatfwain's mate, according to the inftructions he had received; and he had time enough to defcend before he was in any danger of being detected by his commander, who could not for a whole hour recollect himfelf from the amazement and confternation which had overpowered his faculties.

At length, however, he got up and rung his bel' with great agitation. He repeated the fummons more than once; but no regard being paid to this alarm, his dread returned with double terror, a cold fweat bedewed his limbs, his knees knocked together, his hair briftled up, and the remains of his teeth were fhattered to pieces in the convulfive vibrations of his jaws.

In the midft of this agony, he made one defperate effort, and burfting open the door of his apartment, bolted into Hatchway's chamber, which happened to be on the fame floor. There he found the lieutenant in a counterfeit fwoon; who pretended to wake from his trance in an ejaculation of 'Lord have mercy upon us!' And being queftioned by the terrified commodore with regard to what had happened, affured him he had heard the fame voice and clap of thunder by which Trunnion himfelf had been difcompofed.

Pipes, whofe turn it was to watch, concurred in giving evidence to the fame purpofe; and the commodore not only owned that he had heard the voice, but likewife communicated his vifion, with all the aggravation which his difturbed fancy fuggefted.

A confultation immediately enfued, in which Mr. Hatchway very gravely obferved, that the finger of God was plainly perceivable in thofe fignals; and that it would

would be both ſinful and fooliſh to diſregard his commands; eſpecially as the match propoſed was, in all reſpects, more advantageous than any that one of his years and infirmities could reaſonably expect; declaring, that for his own part he would not endanger his ſoul and body by living one day longer under the ſame roof with a man who deſpiſed the holy will of Heaven; and Tom Pipes adhered to the ſame pious reſolution.

Trunnion's perſeverance could not reſiſt the number and diverſity of conſiderations that aſſaulted it; he revolved in ſilence all the oppoſite motives that occurred to his reflection; and after having been, to all appearance, bewildered in the labyrinth of his own thoughts, he wiped the ſweat from his forehead, and heaving a piteous groan, yielded to their remonſtrances in theſe words: 'Well, ſince it muſt be ſo, I think we muſt e'n grapple; but d—n my eyes! 'tis a d—n'd hard caſe that a fellow of my years ſhould be compelled, d'ye ſee, to beat up to windward all the reſt of my life, againſt the current of his own inclination.'

This important article being diſcuſſed, Mr. Hatchway ſet out in the morning to viſit the deſpairing ſhepherdeſs, and was handſomely rewarded for the enlivening tidings with which he bleſſed her ears. Sick as ſhe was, ſhe could not help laughing heartily at the contrivance, in conſequence of which her ſwain's aſſent had been obtained; and gave the lieutenant ten guineas for Tom Pipes, in conſideration of the part he acted in the farce.

In the afternoon the commodore ſuffered himſelf to be conveyed to her apartment, like a felon to execution, and was received by her in a languiſhing manner and genteel diſhabille, accompanied by her ſiſter-in-law; who was, for very obvious reaſons, extremely ſolicitous about her ſucceſs. Though the lieutenant had tutored him touching his behaviour at this interview, he made a thouſand wry faces before he could pronounce the ſimple ſalutation of *How d'ye* to his miſtreſs; and after his counſellor had urged him with twenty or thirty

whiſpers, to each of which he had replied aloud, 'D—n your eyes, I won't!' he got up, and halting towards the couch on which Mrs. Grizzle reclined in a ſtate of ſtrange expectation, and ſeized her hand, and preſſed it to his lips; but this piece of gallantry he performed in ſuch a reluctant, uncouth, indignant manner, that the nymph had need of all her reſolution to endure the compliment without ſhrinking; and he himſelf was ſo diſconcerted at what he had done, that he inſtantly retired to the other end of the room, where he ſat ſilent, and broiled with ſhame and vexation. Mrs. Pickle, like a ſenſible matron, quitted the place, on pretence of going to the nurſery; and Mr. Hatchway taking the hint, recollected that he had left his tobacco-pouch in the parlour, whither he immediately deſcended, leaving the two lovers to their mutual endearments. Never had the commodore found himſelf in ſuch a diſagreeable dilemma before. He ſat in an agony of ſuſpenſe, as if he every moment dreaded the diſſolution of nature; and the imploring ſighs of his future bride added, if poſſible, to the pangs of his diſtreſs. Impatient of his ſituation, he rolled his eye around in queſt of ſome relief, and unable to contain himſelf, exclaimed, 'D———n ſeize the fellow and his pouch too! I believe he has ſheered off, and left me here in the ſtays.' Mrs. Grizzle, who could not help taking ſome notice of this manifeſtation of chagrin, lamented her unhappy fate in being ſo diſagreeable to him that he could not put up with her company for a few moments without repining; and began in very tender terms to reproach him with his inhumanity and indifference. To this expoſtulation he replied, 'Zounds! what would the woman have? Let the parſon do his office when he wool, here I am, ready to be reeved in the matrimonial block, d'ye ſee! and d—n all nonſenſical palaver!' So ſaying, he retreated, leaving his miſtreſs not at all diſobliged at his plain-dealing. That ſame evening the treaty of marriage was brought upon the carpet; and, by means of Mr. Pickle and the lieutenant, ſettled to the ſatisfac-

tion of all parties, without the intervention of lawyers, whom Mr. Trunnion expreſsly excluded from all ſhare in the buſineſs; making that condition the indiſpenſible preliminary of the whole agreement. Things being brought to this bearing, Mrs. Grizzle's heart dilated with joy; her health, which, by the bye, was never dangerouſly impaired, ſhe recovered as if by enchantment; and a day being fixed for the nuptials, employed the ſhort period of her celibacy in chuſing ornaments for the celebration of her entrance into the married ſtate.

CHAP. VIII.

Preparations are made for the Commodore's Wedding, which is delayed by an Accident that hurried him the Lord knows whither.

THE fame of this extraordinary conjunction ſpread all over the county; and on the day appointed for their eſpouſals, the church was ſurrounded with an inconceivable multitude. The commodore, to give a ſpecimen of his gallantry, by the advice of his friend Hatchway, reſolved to appear on horſeback on the grand occaſion, at the head of all his male attendants, whom he had rigged with the white ſhirts and black caps formerly belonging to his barge's crew; and he bought a couple of hunters for the accommodation of himſelf and his lieutenant. With this equipage then he ſet out from the garriſon for the church, after having diſpatched a meſſenger to apprize the bride that he and his company were mounted. She got immediately into the coach, accompanied by her brother and his wife, and drove directly to the place of aſſignation, where ſeveral pews were demoliſhed, and divers perſons almoſt preſſed to death, by the eagerneſs of the crowd that broke in to ſee the ceremony performed. Thus arrived at the altar, and the prieſt in attendance, they waited a whole half hour for the commodore, at whoſe ſlowneſs they began to be under ſome apprehenſion, and accordingly diſmiſſed a ſervant to quicken his pace. The valet having rode ſomething more than a mile, eſpied the whole troop diſpoſed in a long field, croſſing

the

the road obliquely, and headed by the bridegroom and his friend Hatchway, who finding himſelf hindered by a hedge from proceeding farther in the ſame direction, fired a piſtol, and ſtood over to the other ſide, making an obtuſe angle with the line of his former courſe; and the reſt of the ſquadron followed his example, keeping always in the rear of each other, like a flight of wild geeſe.

Surprized at this ſtrange method of journeying, the meſſenger came up, and told the commodore that his lady and her company expected him in the church, where they had tarried a conſiderable time, and were beginning to be very uneaſy at his delay; and therefore deſired he would proceed with more expedition. To this meſſage Mr. Trunnion replied, 'Hark ye, brother, don't you ſee we make all poſſible ſpeed? Go back, and tell thoſe who ſent you, that the wind has ſhifted ſince we weighed anchor, and that we are obliged to make very ſhort trips in tacking, by reaſon of the narrowneſs of the channel; and that as we lie within ſix points of the wind, they muſt make ſome allowance for variation and lee-way.'—'Lord, Sir!' ſaid the valet, 'what occaſion have you to go zig-zag in that manner? Do but clap ſpurs to your horſes, and ride ſtraight forward, and I'll engage you ſhall be at the church porch in leſs than a quarter of an hour.'—'What! right in the wind's eye?' anſwered the commander. 'Ahey, brother! where did you learn your navigation? Hawſer Trunnion is not to be taught, at this time of day, how to lie his courſe, or keep his own reckoning. And as for you, brother, you beſt know the trim of your own frigate.' The courier finding he had to do with people who would not be eaſily perſuaded out of their own opinions, returned to the temple, and made a report of what he had ſeen and heard, to the no ſmall conſolation of the bride, who had begun to diſcover ſome ſigns of diſquiet. Compoſed, however, by this piece of intelligence, ſhe exerted her patience for the ſpace of another half hour, during which period

period ſeeing no bridegroom arrive, ſhe was exceedingly alarmed; ſo that all the ſpectators could eaſily perceive her perturbation, which manifeſted itſelf in frequent palpitations, heart-heavings, and alterations of countenance, in ſpite of the aſſiſtance of a ſmelling-bottle, which ſhe inceſſantly applied to her noſtrils.

Various were the conjectures of the company on this occaſion: ſome imagined he had miſtaken the place of rendezvous, as he had never been at church ſince he firſt ſettled in that pariſh; others believed he had met with ſome accident, in conſequence of which his attendants had carried him back to their own houſe; and a third ſet, in which the bride herſelf was thought to be comprehended, could not help ſuſpecting that the commodore had changed his mind. But all theſe ſuppoſitions, ingenious as they were, happened to be wide of the true cauſe that detained him, which was no other than this: the commodore and his crew had, by dint of turning, almoſt weathered the parſon's houſe that ſtood to windward of the church, when the notes of a pack of hounds unluckily reached the ears of the two hunters which Trunnion and the lieutenant beſtrode. Theſe fleet animals no ſooner heard the enlivening ſound, than eager for the chace, they ſprung away all of a ſudden, and ſtrained every nerve to partake of the ſport, flew acroſs the fields with incredible ſpeed, over-leaped hedges and ditches, and every thing in their way, without the leaſt regard to their unfortunate riders. The lieutenant, whoſe ſteed had got the heels of the other, finding it would be great folly and preſumption in him to pretend to keep the ſaddle with his wooden leg, very wiſely took the opportunity of throwing himſelf off in his paſſage through a field of rich clover, among which he lay at his eaſe; and ſeeing his captain advancing at full gallop, hailed him with the ſalutation of 'What chear? ho!' The commodore, who was in infinite diſtreſs, eyeing him aſkance as he paſſed, replied with a faultering voice, 'O, d—n you! you are ſafe at anchor; I wiſh to God I were as faſt moored.' Neverthe-

theless, conscious of his disabled heel, he would not venture to try the experiment which had succeeded so well with Hatchway, but resolved to stick as close as possibled to his horse's back, until Providence should interpose in his behalf. With this view he dropped his whip, and with his right hand laid fast-hold on the pummel, contracting every muscle in his body to secure himself in his seat, and grinning most formidably, in consequence of this exertion. In this attitude he was hurried on a considerable way, when all on a sudden his view was comforted by a five-bar gate that appeared before him, as he never doubted that there the career of his hunter must necessarily end. But, alas! he reckoned without his host; far from halting at this obstruction, the horse sprung over it with amazing agility, to the utter confusion and disorder of his owner, who lost his hat and periwig in the leap, and now began to think in good earnest, that he was actually mounted on the back of the devil. He recommended himself to God, his reflection forsook him, his eye-sight and all his other senses failed, he quitted the reins, and fastening by instinct on the mane, was in this condition conveyed into the midst of the sportsmen, who were astonished at the sight of such an apparition. Neither was their surprize to be wondered at, if we reflect on the figure that presented itself to their view. The commodore's person was at all times an object of admiration; much more so on this occasion, when every singularity was aggravated by the circumstances of his dress and disaster.

He had put on in honour of his nuptials his best coat of blue broad-cloth, cut by a taylor of Ramsgate, and trimmed with five dozen of brass buttons large and small; his breeches were of the same piece, fastened at the knees with large bunches of tape; his waistcoat was of red plush lapelled with green velvet, and garnished with vellum holes; his boots bore an infinite resemblance both in colour and shape to a pair of leather buckets; his shoulder was graced with a broad buff belt, from whence depended a huge hanger with a hilt like

that of a backſword; and on each ſide of his pummel appeared a ruſty piſtol rammed in a caſe covered with a bear-ſkin. The loſs of his tie-periwig and laced hat, which were curioſities of the kind, did not at all contribute to the improvement of the picture, but on the contrary, by exhibiting his bald pate, and the natural extenſion of his lanthorn-jaws, added to the peculiarity and extravagance of the whole. Such a ſpectacle could not have failed of diverting the whole company from the chace, had his horſe thought proper to purſue a different route, but the beaſt was too keen a ſporter to chuſe any other way than that which the ſtag followed; and therefore, without ſtopping to gratify the curioſity of the ſpectators, he in a few minutes outſtripped every hunter in the field. There being a deep hollow way betwixt him and the hounds, rather than ride round about the length of a furlong to a path that croſſed the lane, he tranſported himſelf at one jump, to the unſpeakable aſtoniſhment and terror of a waggoner who chanced to be underneath, and ſaw this phænomenon fly over his carriage. This was not the only adventure he atchieved. The ſtag having taken a deep river that lay in his way, every man directed his courſe to a bridge in the neighbourhood; but our bridegroom's courſer deſpiſing all ſuch conveniences, plunged into the ſtream without heſitation, and ſwam in a twinkling to the oppoſite ſhore. This ſudden immerſion into an element of which Trunnion was properly a native, in all probability helped to recruit the exhauſted ſpirits of his rider, who at his landing on the other ſide gave ſome tokens of ſenſation, by hollooing aloud for aſſiſtance, which he could not poſſibly receive, becauſe his horſe ſtill maintained the advantage he had gained, and would not allow himſelf to be overtaken.

In ſhort, after a long chace that laſted ſeveral hours, and extended to a dozen miles at leaſt, he was the firſt in at the death of the deer, being ſeconded by the lieutenant's gelding, which, actuated by the ſame ſpirit, had, without a rider, followed his companion's example.

Our

Our bridegroom finding himſelf at laſt brought up, or, in other words, at the end of his career, took the opportunity of this firſt pauſe to deſire the huntſmen would lend him a hand in diſmounting; and was by their condeſcenſion ſafely placed on the graſs, where he ſat ſtaring at the company as they came in, with ſuch wildneſs of aſtoniſhment in his looks, as if he had been a creature of another ſpecies, dropped among them from the clouds.

Before they had fleſhed the hounds, however, he recollected himſelf, and ſeeing one of the ſportſmen take a ſmall flaſk out of his pocket and apply it to his mouth, judged the cordial to be no other than neat Coniac, which it really was; and expreſſing a deſire of participation, was immediately accommodated with a moderate doſe, which perfectly compleated his recovery.

By this time he and his two horſes had engroſſed the attention of the whole crowd: while ſome admired the elegant proportion and uncommon ſpirit of the two animals, the reſt contemplated the ſurprizing appearance of their maſter, whom before they had only ſeen *en paſſant*; and at length, one of the gentlemen accoſting him very courteouſly, ſignified his wonder at ſeeing him in ſuch an equipage, and aſked if he had not dropped his companion by the way. 'Why, look ye, brother,' replied the commodore, 'mayhap you think me an odd ſort of a fellow, ſeeing me in this trim, eſpecially as I have loſt part of my rigging; but this here is the caſe, d'ye ſee: I weighed anchor from my own houſe this morning at ten A.M. with fair weather, and a favourable breeze at S.S.E. being bound to next church on the voyage of matrimony: but howſomever, we had not run down a quarter of a league, when the wind ſhifting, blowed directly in our teeth; ſo that we were forced to tack all the way, d'ye ſee, and had almoſt beat up within ſight of the port, when theſe ſons of bitches of horſes which I had bought but two days before, (for my own part, I believe they are devils incarnate) luffed round in a trice, and then refuſing the helm,

drove away like lightning with me and my lieutenant, who ſoon came to an anchor in an excellent good birth. As for my own part, I have been carried over rocks, and flats, and quickſands; among which I have pitched away a ſpecial good tie-periwig and an iron-bound hat; and at laſt, thank God! am got into ſmooth water and ſafe riding: but if ever I venture my carcaſe upon ſuch a hare'um-ſcare'um blood of a bitch again, my name is not Hawſer Trunnion, d—n my eyes!'

One of the company, ſtruck with this name, which he had often heard, immediately laid hold on his declaration at the cloſe of this ſingular account; and obſerving that his horſes were very vicious, aſked how he intended to return. 'As for that matter,' replied Mr. Trunnion, 'I am reſolved to hire a ſledge, or waggon, or ſuch a thing as a jack-aſs; for I'll be d—n'd if ever I croſs the back of a horſe again.'—'And what do you propoſe to do with theſe creatures?' ſaid the other, pointing to the hunters, 'they ſeem to have ſome mettle; but then they are mere colts, and will take the devil and all of breaking. Methinks this hinder one is ſhoulder-ſlipped.'—'D—n them!' cried the commodore, 'I wiſh both their necks were broke, thof the two coſt me forty good yellow-boys.'—'Forty guineas!' exclaimed the ſtranger, who was a ſquire and a jockey, as well as owner of the pack; 'Lord! Lord! how a man may be impoſed upon! Why, theſe cattle are clumſy enough to go to plough; mind what a flat counter; do but obſerver how ſharp this here one is in the withers: then he's fired in the farther fetlock.' In ſhort, this connoiſſeur in horſe-fleſh, having diſcovered in them all the defects which can poſſibly be found in that ſpecies of animals, offered to give him ten guineas for the two, ſaying, he would convert them into beaſts of burden. The owner, who (after what had happened) was very well diſpoſed to liſten to any thing that was ſaid to their prejudice, implicitly believed the truth of the ſtranger's aſſeverations, diſcharged a furious volley of oaths againſt the raſcal who had taken him in,

and forthwith ſtruck a bargain with the ſquire, who paid him inſtantly for his purchaſe; in conſequence of which he won the plate at the next Canterbury races.

This affair being tranſacted to the mutual ſatisfaction of both parties, as well as to the general entertainment of the company, who laughed in their ſleeves at the dexterity of their friend, Trunnion was ſet upon the ſquire's own horſe, and led by his ſervant in the midſt of this cavalcade, which proceeded to a neighbouring village, where they had beſpoke dinner, and where our bridegroom found means to provide himſelf with another hat and wig. With regard to his marriage, he bore his diſappointment with the temper of a philoſopher; and the exerciſe he had undergone having quickened his appetite, ſat down at table in the midſt of his new acquaintance, making a very hearty meal, and moiſtening every morſel with a draught of the ale, which he found very much to his ſatisfaction.

CHAP. IX.

He is found by the Lieutenant; reconducted to his own Houſe; married to Mrs. Grizzle, who meets with a ſmall Misfortune in the Night, and aſſerts her Prerogative next Morning: in Conſequence of which her Huſband's Eye is endangered.

MEANWHILE, Lieutenant Hatchway made ſhift to hobble to the church, where he informed the company of what had happened to the commodore; and the bride behaved with great decency on the occaſion; for, as ſoon as ſhe underſtood the danger to which her future huſband was expoſed, ſhe fainted in the arms of her ſiſter-in-law, to the ſurprize of all the ſpectators, who could not comprehend the cauſe of her diſorder; and when ſhe was recovered by the application of ſmelling-bottles, earneſtly begged that Mr. Hatchway and Tom Pipes would take her brother's coach, and go in queſt of their commander.

This taſk they readily undertook, being eſcorted by all the reſt of his adherents on horſeback; while the

bride and her friends were invited to the parſon's houſe, and the ceremony deferred till another occaſion.

The lieutenant, ſteering his courſe as near the line of direction in which Trunnion went off, as the coach-road would permit, got intelligence of his track from one farm-houſe to another; for ſuch an apparition could not fail of attracting particular notice; and one of the horſemen having picked up his hat and wig in a bye-path, the whole troop entered the village where he lodged about four o'clock in the afternoon. When they underſtood he was ſafely houſed at the George, they rode up to the door in a body, and expreſſed their ſatisfaction in three cheers; which were returned by the company within, as ſoon as they were inſtructed in the nature of the ſalute by Trunnion, who by this time had entered into all the jollity of his new friends, and was indeed more than half ſeas over. The lieutenant was introduced to all preſent as his ſworn brother, and had ſomething toſſed up for his dinner. Tom Pipes and the crew were regaled in another room; and a freſh pair of horſes being put to the coach, about ſix in the evening the commodore, with all his attendants, departed for the garriſon, after having ſhook hands with every individual in the houſe.

Without any farther accident he was conveyed in ſafety to his own gate before nine, and committed to the care of Pipes, who carried him inſtantly to his hammock, while the lieutenant was driven away to the place where the bride and her friends remained with great anxiety, which vaniſhed when he aſſured them that his commodore was ſafe, being ſucceeded by abundance of mirth and pleaſantry at the account he gave of Trunnion's adventure.

Another day was fixed for the nuptials; and in order to baulk the curioſity of idle people, which had given great offence, the parſon was prevailed upon to perform the ceremony in the garriſon, which all that day was adorned with flags and pendants diſplayed, and at night illuminated by the direction of Hatchway,

who

who also ordered the peteraroes to be fired as soon as the marriage-knot was tied. Neither were the other parts of the entertainment neglected by this ingenious contriver, who produced undeniable proofs of his elegance and art in the wedding supper, which had been committed to his management and direction. This genial banquet was entirely composed of sea dishes; a huge pillaw, consisting of a large piece of beef sliced, a couple of fowls, and half a peck of rice, smoaked in the middle of the board: a dish of hard fish swimming in oil, appeared at each end, the sides being furnished with a mess of that savoury composition known by the name of lob's course, and a plate of salmagundy. The second course displayed a goose of a monstrous magnitude, flanked with two guinea-hens, a pig barbacued, a hock of salt pork in the midst of a peas-pudding, a leg of mutton roasted with potatoes, and another boiled with yams. The third service was made up of a loin of fresh pork with apple-sauce, a kid smothered with onions, and a terrapin baked in the shell; and last of all, a prodigious sea-pie was presented, with an infinite volume of pancakes and fritters. That every thing might be answerable to the magnificence of this delicate feast, he had provided vast quanties of strong beer, flip, rumbo, and burnt brandy, with plenty of Barbadoes-water for the ladies; and hired all the fiddles within six miles, who with the addition of a drum, bag-pipe, and Welsh-harp, regaled the guests with a most melodious concert.

The company, who were not at all exceptious, seemed extremely well pleased with every particular of the entertainment; and the evening being spent in the most social manner, the bride was by her sister conducted to her apartment, where, however, a trifling circumstance had like to have destroyed the harmony which had been hitherto maintained.

I have already observed, that there was not one standing bed within the walls; therefore, the reader will not wonder that Mrs. Trunnion was out of hu-

mour,

mour, when ſhe found herſelf under the neceſſity of being confined with her ſpouſe in a hammock, which, though enlarged with a double portion of canvas, and dilated with a yoke for the occaſion, was at beſt but a diſagreeable, not to ſay dangerous ſituation. She accordingly complained with ſome warmth of this inconvenience, which ſhe imputed to diſreſpect, and at firſt abſolutely refuſed to put up with the expedient: but Mrs. Pickle ſoon brought her to reaſon and compliance, by obſerving, that one night would ſoon be elapſed, and next day ſhe might regulate her own œconomy.

Thus perſuaded, ſhe ventured into the vehicle, and was viſited by her huſband in leſs than an hour, the company being departed to their own homes, and the garriſon left to the command of his lieutenant and mate. But it ſeems the hooks that ſupported this ſwinging couch were not calculated for the addition of weight which they were now deſtined to bear; and therefore gave way in the middle of the night, to the no ſmall terror of Mrs. Trunnion, who perceiving herſelf falling, ſcreamed aloud, and by that exclamation brought Hatchway, with a light, into the chamber. Though ſhe had received no injury by the fall, ſhe was extremely diſcompoſed and incenſed at the accident, which ſhe even openly aſcribed to the obſtinacy and whimſical oddity of the commodore in ſuch petulant terms, as evidently declared that ſhe thought her great aim accompliſhed, and her authority ſecured againſt all the ſhocks of fortune. Indeed, her bed-fellow ſeemed to be of the ſame opinion, by his tacit reſignation; for he made no reply to her inſinuations, but with a moſt vinegar aſpect crawled out of his neſt, and betook himſelf to reſt in another apartment, while his irritated ſpouſe diſmiſſed the lieutenant, and from the wreck of the hammock made an occaſional bed for herſelf on the floor, fully determined to provide better accommodation for the next night's lodging.

Having no inclination to ſleep, her thoughts during the

the remaining part of the night were engroſſed by a ſcheme of reformation ſhe was reſolved to execute in the family; and no ſooner did the firſt lark bid ſalutation to the morn, than ſtarting from her humble couch, and huddling on her cloaths, ſhe ſallied from her chamber, explored her way through paths before unknown, and in the courſe of her reſearches perceived a large bell, to which ſhe made ſuch effectual application as alarmed every ſoul in the family. In a moment ſhe was ſurrounded by Hatchway, Pipes, and all the reſt of the ſervants half dreſſed; but ſeeing none of the feminine gender appear, ſhe began to ſtorm at the ſloth and lazineſs of the maids, who, ſhe obſerved, ought to have been at work an hour at leaſt before ſhe called; and then, for the firſt time, underſtood that no woman was permitted to ſleep within the walls.

She did not fail to exclaim againſt this regulation; and being informed that the cook and chambermaid lodged in a ſmall office-houſe that ſtood without the gate, ordered the draw-bridge to be let down, and in perſon beat up their quarters, commanding them forthwith to ſet about ſcouring the rooms, which had not been hitherto kept in a very decent condition, while two men were immediately employed to tranſport the bed on which ſhe uſed to lie from her brother's houſe to her new habitation; ſo that, in leſs than two hours, the whole œconomy of the garriſon was turned topſy-turvy, and every thing involved in tumult and noiſe. Trunnion being diſturbed and diſtracted with the uproar, turned out in his ſhirt like a maniack, and arming himſelf with a cudgel of crab-tree, made an irruption into his wife's apartment, where perceiving a couple of carpenters at work, in joining a bedſtead, he, with many dreadful oaths and opprobrious invectives, ordered them to deſiſt, ſwearing, he would ſuffer no bulk-heads nor hurricane-houſes to ſtand where he was maſter; but finding his remonſtrances diſregarded by theſe mechanicks, who believed him to be ſome madman belonging to the family, who had broke from his confinement,

confinement, he aſſaulted them both with great fury and indignation, and was handled ſo roughly in the encounter, that in a very ſhort time he meaſured his length on the floor, in conſequence of a blow that he received from a hammer, by which the ſight of his remaining eye was grievouſly endangered.

Having thus reduced him to a ſtate of ſubjection, they reſolved to ſecure him with cords, and were actually buſy in adjuſting his fetters, when he was exempted from the diſgrace by the accidental entrance of his ſpouſe, who reſcued him from the hands of his adverſaries; and, in the midſt of her condolence, imputed his misfortune to the inconſiderate roughneſs of his own diſpoſition.

He breathed nothing but revenge, and made ſome efforts to chaſtiſe the inſolence of the workmen; who, as ſoon as they underſtood his quality, aſked forgiveneſs for what they had done with great humility, proteſting that they did not know he was maſter of the houſe. But, far from being ſatisfied with this apology, he groped about for the bell, (the inflammation of his eye having utterly deprived him of his ſight) and the rope being, by the precaution of the delinquents, conveyed out of his reach, began to ſtorm with incredible vociferation, like a lion roaring in the toil, pouring forth innumerable oaths and execrations, and calling by name Hatchway and Pipes, who being within hearing, obeyed the extraordinary ſummons, and were ordered to put the carpenters in irons, for having audaciouſly aſſaulted him in his own houſe.

His myrmidons ſeeing he had been evil-intreated, were exaſperated at the inſult he had ſuffered, which they conſidered as an affront upon the dignity of the garriſon; the more ſo, as the mutineers ſeemed to put themſelves in a poſture of defence, and ſet their authority at defiance: they therefore unſheathed their cutlaſſes, which they commonly wore as badges of their commiſſion; and a deſperate engagement, in all probability, would have enſued, had not the lady of the caſtle interpoſed,

interpofed, and prevented the effects of their animofity, by affuring the lieutenant that the commodore had been the aggreffor; and that the workmen, finding themfelves attacked in fuch an extraordinary manner, by a perfon whom they did not know, were obliged to act in their own defence, by which he had received that unlucky contufion.

Mr. Hatchway no fooner learned the fentiments of Mrs. Trunnion, than fheathing his indignation, he told the commodore he fhould always be ready to execute his lawful commands; but that he could not in confcience be concerned in oppreffing poor people who had been guilty of no offence.

This unexpected declaration, together with the behaviour of his wife, who in his hearing defired the carpenters to refume their work, filled the breaft of Trunnion with rage and mortification. He pulled off his woollen night-cap, pummelled his bare pate, beat the floor alternately with his feet, fwore his people had betrayed him, and curfed himfelf to the loweft pit of hell, for having admitted fuch a cockatrice into his family. But all thefe exclamations did not avail; they were among the laft effays of his refiftance to the will of his wife, whofe influence among his adherents had already fwallowed up his own; and who now peremptorily told him, that he muft leave the management of every thing within doors to her, who underftood beft what was for his honour and advantage. She then ordered a poultice to be prepared for his eye, which being applied, he was committed to the care of Pipes, by whom he was led about the houfe like a blind bear growling for prey, while his induftrious yoke-fellow executed every circumftance of the plan fhe had projected; fo that, when he recovered his vifion, he was an utter ftranger in his own houfe.

CHAP. X.

The Commodore being in some Cases restif, his Lady has recourse to Artifice in the Establishment of her Throne. She exhibits Symptoms of Pregnancy, to the unspeakable Joy of Trunnion, who neverthelefs is baulked in his Expectation.

THESE innovations were not effected without many loud objections on his part; and divers curious dialogues passed between him and his yoke-fellow, who always came off victorious from the dispute; insomuch that his countenance gradually fell; he began to suppress, and at length entirely devoured his chagrin: the terrors of superior authority were plainly perceivable in his features, and in less than three months he became a thorough paced husband. Not that his obstinacy was extinguished, though overcome; in some things he was as inflexible and mulish as ever, but then he durst not kick so openly, and was reduced to the necessity of being passive in his resentments. Mrs. Trunnion, for example, proposed that a coach and six should be purchased, as she could not ride on horseback, and the chaise was a scandalous carriage for a person of her condition; the commodore, conscious of his own inferior capacity in point of reasoning, did not think proper to dispute the proposal, but lent a deaf ear to her repeated remonstrances, though they were enforced with every argument which she thought could soothe, terrify, shame, or decoy him into compliance: in vain did she urge the excess of affection she had for him, as meriting some return of tenderness and condescension; he was even proof against certain menacing hints she gave, touching the resentment of a slighted woman; and he stood out against all the considerations of dignity or disgrace, like a bulwark of brass. Neither was he moved to any indecent or unkind expressions of contradiction, even when she upbraided him with his sordid disposition, and put him in mind of the fortune and honour he had acquired by his marriage; but seemed to retire within

within himſelf, like a tortoiſe when attacked, that ſhrinks within its ſhell, and ſilently endured the ſcourge of her reproaches, without ſeeming ſenſible of the ſmart.

This, however, was the only point in which ſhe had been baffled ſince her nuptials; and as ſhe could by no means digeſt the miſcarriage, ſhe tortured her invention for ſome new plan, by which ſhe might augment her influence and authority: what her genius refuſed, was ſupplied by accident; for ſhe had not lived four months in the garriſon, when ſhe was ſeized with frequent qualms and reachings; her breaſts began to harden, and her ſtomach to be remarkably prominent: in a word, ſhe congratulated herſelf on the ſymptoms of her own fertility, and the commodore was tranſported with joy at the proſpect of an heir of his own begetting.

She knew this was the proper ſeaſon for vindicating her own ſovereignty, and accordingly employed the means which nature had put in her power. There was not a rare piece of furniture and apparel for which ſhe did not long; and one day as ſhe went to church, ſeeing Lady Stately's equipage arrive, ſhe ſuddenly fainted away. Her huſband, whoſe vanity had never been ſo perfectly gratified as with this promiſed harveſt of his own ſowing, took the alarm immediately; and, in order to prevent relapſes of that kind, which might be attended with fatal conſequences to his hope, gave her leave to beſpeak a coach, horſes, and liveries, to her own liking. Thus authorized, ſhe, in a very little time, exhibited ſuch a ſpecimen of her own taſte and magnificence, as afforded ſpeculation to the whole county, and made Trunnion's heart quake within him, becauſe he foreſaw no limits to her extravagance, which alſo manifeſted itſelf in the moſt expenſive preparations for her lying in.

Her pride, which had hitherto regarded the repreſentative of her father's houſe, ſeemed now to loſe all that hereditary reſpect, and prompt her to outſhine and undervalue the elder branch of her family. She behaved to Mrs. Pickle with a ſort of civil reſerve, that implied

a conſcious ſuperiority; and an emulation, in point of grandeur, immediately commenced between the two ſiſters. She every day communicated her importance to the whole pariſh, under pretence of taking the air in her coach, and endeavoured to extend her acquaintance among people of faſhion. Nor was this an undertaking attended with great difficulty; for all perſons whatever, capable of maintaining a certain appearance, will always find admiſſion into what is called the beſt company, and be rated in point of character according to their own valuation, without ſubjecting their pretenſions to the ſmalleſt doubt or examination. In all her viſits and parties, ſhe ſeized every opportunity of declaring her preſent condition; obſerving that ſhe was forbid by her phyſicians to taſte ſuch a pickle, and that ſuch a diſh was poiſon to a woman in her way: nay, where ſhe was on a footing of familiarity, ſhe affected to make wry faces, and complained that the young rogue began to be very unruly, writhing herſelf into divers contortions, as if ſhe had been grievouſly incommoded by the mettle of this future Trunnion. The huſband himſelf did not behave with all the moderation that might have been expected: at the club he frequently mentioned this circumſtance of his own vigour, as a pretty ſucceſsful feat to be performed by an old fellow of fifty-five; and confirmed the opinion of his ſtrength by redoubled ſqueezes of the landlord's hand, which never failed of extorting a ſatisfactory certificate of his might. When his companions drank to the *Hans en kelder*, or Jack in the low cellar, he could not help diſplaying an extraordinary complacence of countenance, and ſignified his intention of ſending the young dog to ſea, as ſoon as he ſhould be able to carry a cartridge, in hopes of ſeeing him an officer before his own death.

This hope helped to conſole him under the extraordinary expence to which he was expoſed by the profuſion of his wife; eſpecially when he conſidered, that his compliance with her prodigality would be limited to the expiration of the nine months, of which the beſt part

was by this time elapſed; yet, in ſpite of all this philoſophical reſignation, her fancy ſometimes ſoared to ſuch a ridiculous and intolerable pitch of inſolence and abſurdity, that his temper forſook him, and he could not help wiſhing in ſecret, that her pride might be confounded in the diſſipation of her moſt flattering hopes, even though he himſelf ſhould be a principal ſufferer by the diſappointment. Theſe, however, were no other than the ſuggeſtions of temporary diſguſts, that commonly ſubſided as ſuddenly as they aroſe, and never gave the leaſt diſturbance to the perſon who inſpired them, becauſe he took care to conceal them carefully from her knowledge.

Meanwhile ſhe happily advanced in her reckoning, with the promiſe of a favourable iſſue; the term of her computation expired, and in the middle of the night ſhe was viſited by certain warnings that ſeemed to beſpeak the approach of the critical moment. The commodore got up with great alacrity, and called the midwife, who had been ſeveral days in the houſe; the goſſips were immediately ſummoned, and the moſt intereſting expectations prevailed: but the ſymptoms of labour gradually vaniſhed; and, as the matrons ſagely obſerved, this was no more than a falſe alarm.

Two nights after, they received a ſecond intimation; and, as ſhe was ſenſibly diminiſhed in the waiſt, every thing was ſuppoſed to be in a fair way; yet this viſitation was not more concluſive than the former; her pains wore off in ſpite of all her endeavours to encourage them; and the good women betook themſelves to their reſpective homes, in expectation of finding the third attack deciſive, alluding to the well-known maxim, that *number three is always fortunate*. For once, however, this apothegm failed; the next call was altogether as ineffectual as the former; and moreover attended with a phænomenon which to them was equally ſtrange and inexplicable: this was no other than ſuch a reduction in the ſize of Mrs. Trunnion as might have been expected after the birth of a full-grown child. Startled

at ſuch an unaccountable event, they ſat in cloſe divan; and concluding that the caſe was in all reſpects unnatural and prodigious, deſired that a meſſenger might be immediately diſpatched for ſome male practitioner in the art of midwifery.

The commodore, without gueſſing the cauſe of their perplexity, ordered Pipes immediately on this piece of duty; and in leſs than two hours they were aſſiſted by the advice of a ſurgeon of the neighbourhood, who boldly affirmed, that the patient had never been with child. This aſſeveration was like a clap of thunder to Mr. Trunnion, who had been, during eight whole days and nights, in continual expectation of being hailed with the appellation of father.

After ſome recollection, he ſwore the ſurgeon was an ignorant fellow, and that he would not take his word for what he advanced; being comforted and confirmed in his want of faith by the inſinuations of the midwife, who ſtill perſiſted to feed Mrs. Trunnion with hopes of a ſpeedy and ſafe delivery; obſerving, that ſhe had been concerned in many a caſe of the ſame nature, where a fine child was found, even after all ſigns of the mother's pregnancy had diſappeared. Every twig of hope, how ſlender ſoever it may be, is eagerly caught hold on by people who find themſelves in danger of being diſappointed. To every queſtion propoſed by her to the lady, with the preambles of 'Han't you?' or, 'Don't you?' an anſwer was made in the affirmative, whether agreeable to truth or not; becauſe the reſpondent could not find in her heart to diſown any ſymptom that might favour the notion ſhe had ſo long indulged.

This experienced proficient in the obſtetrick art was therefore kept in cloſe attendance for the ſpace of three weeks, during which the patient had ſeveral returns of what ſhe pleaſed herſelf with believing to be labour pains; till at length ſhe and her huſband became the ſtanding joke of the pariſh: and this infatuated couple could ſcarce be prevailed upon to part with their hopes, even when ſhe appeared as lank as a greyhound, and they

were

were furniſhed with other unqueſtionable proofs of their having been deceived. But they could not for ever remain under the influence of this ſweet deluſion; which at laſt faded away, and was ſucceeded by a paroxiſm of ſhame and confuſion, that kept the huſband within doors for the ſpace of a whole fortnight, and confined his lady to her bed for a ſeries of weeks, during which ſhe ſuffered all the anguiſh of the moſt intenſe mortification; yet even this was ſubdued by the lenient hand of time.

The firſt reſpite from her chagrin was employed in the ſtrict diſcharge of what are called the duties of religion, which ſhe performed with moſt rancorous ſeverity; ſetting on foot a perſecution in her own family, that made the houſe too hot for all the menial ſervants; even ruffled the almoſt invincible indifference of Tom Pipes, harraſſed the commodore himſelf out of all patience, and ſpared no individual but Lieutenant Hatchway, whom ſhe never ventured to diſoblige.

CHAP. XI.

Mrs. Trunnion erects a Tyranny in the Garriſon, while her Huſband conceives an Affection for his Nephew Perry, who manifeſts a Peculiarity of Diſpoſition even in his tender Years.

HAVING exerciſed herſelf three months in ſuch pious amuſements, ſhe appeared again in the world; but her misfortune had made ſuch an impreſſion on her mind, that ſhe could not bear the ſight of a child, and trembled whenever the converſation happened to turn upon a chriſtening. Her temper, which was naturally none of the ſweeteſt, ſeemed to have imbibed a double proportion of ſouring from her diſappointment; of conſequence her company was not much coveted, and ſhe found very few people diſpoſed to treat her with thoſe marks of conſideration which ſhe looked upon as her due. This neglect detached her from the ſociety of an unmannerly world; ſhe concentred the energy of all her talents in the government of her own houſe, which groaned accordingly under her arbitrary ſway; and in the

brandy-bottle found ample consolation for all the affliction she had undergone.

As for the commodore, he, in a little time, weathered his disgrace, after having sustained many severe jokes from the lieutenant; and now his chief aim being to be absent from his own house as much as possible, he frequented the publick-house more than ever, more assiduously cultivated the friendship of his brother-in-law Mr. Pickle; and, in the course of their intimacy, conceived an affection for his nephew Perry, which did not end but with his life. Indeed, it must be owned, that Trunnion was not naturally deficient in the social passions of the soul; which, though they were strangely warped, disguised, and overborne, by the circumstance of his boisterous life and education, did not fail to manifest themselves occasionally through the whole course of his behaviour.

As all the hopes of propagating his own name had perished, and his relations lay under the interdiction of his hate, it is no wonder, that through the familiarity and friendly intercourse subsisting between him and Mr. Gamaliel, he contracted a liking for the boy, who by this time entered the third year of his age, and was indeed a very handsome, healthy, and promising child; and what seemed to ingratiate him still more with his uncle, was a certain oddity of disposition for which he had been remarkable even from the cradle. It is reported of him, that before the first year of his infancy was elapsed, he used very often, immediately after being dressed, in the midst of the caresses which were bestowed upon him by his mother, while she indulged herself in the contemplation of her own happiness, all of a sudden to alarm her with a fit of shrieks and cries, which continued with great violence till he was stripped to the skin with the utmost expedition by order of his affrighted parent, who thought his tender body was tortured by the misapplication of some unlucky pin; and when he had given them all this disturbance and unnecessary trouble, he would lie sprawling and laughing in their faces,

faces, as if he ridiculed the impertinence of their concern. Nay, it is affirmed, that one day, when an old woman who attended in the nurfery had by ftealth conveyed a bottle of cordial waters to her mouth, he pulled his nurfe by the fleeve, and by a flight glance detecting the theft, tipt her the wink with a particular flynefs of countenance, as if he had faid with a fneer, 'Aye, eye, that is what you muft all come to!' But thefe inftances of reflection in a babe nine months old are fo incredible, that I look upon them as *ex poft facto* obfervations, founded upon imaginary recollection, when he was in a more advanced age, and his peculiarities of temper became much more remarkable; of a piece with the ingenious difcoveries of thofe fagacious obfervers, who can difcern fomething evidently characteriftick in the features of any noted perfonage whofe character they have previoufly heard explained; yet, without pretending to fpecify at what period of his childhood this fingularity firft appeared, I can with great truth declare, that when he firft attracted the notice and affection of his uncle, it was plainly perceivable.

One would imagine he had marked out the commodore as a proper object of ridicule, for almoft all his little childifh fatire was levelled againft him. I will not deny that he might have been influenced in this particular by the example and inftruction of Mr. Hatchway, who delighted in fuperintending the firft effays of his genius. As the gout had taken up its refidence in Mr. Trunnion's great toe, from whence it never removed, no not for a day, little Perry took great pleafure in treading by accident on this infirm member; and when his uncle, incenfed by the pain, ufed to damn him for a hell-begotten brat, he would appeafe him in a twinkling, by returning the curfe with equal emphafis, and afking what was the matter with old Hannibal Tough; an appellation by which the lieutenant had taught him to diftinguifh this grim commander.

Neither was this the only experiment he tried upon the patience of the commodore, with whofe nofe he ufed

to

to take indecent freedoms, even while he was fondled on his knee; in one month he put him to the expence of two guineas in ſeal-ſkin, by picking his pocket of divers tobacco-pouches, all of which he in ſecret committed to the flames. Nor did the caprice of his diſpoſition abſtain from the favourite beverage of Trunnion, who more than once ſwallowed a whole draught in which his brother's ſnuff-box had been emptied, before he perceived the diſagreeable infuſion: and one day, when the commodore had chaſtiſed him by a gentle tap with his cane, he fell flat on the floor, as if he had been deprived of all ſenſe and motion, to the terror and amazement of the ſtriker; and after having filled the whole houſe with confuſion and diſmay, opened his eyes, and laughed heartily at the ſucceſs of his own impoſition.

It would be an endleſs, and perhaps no very agreeable taſk, to enumerate all the unlucky pranks he played upon his uncle and others, before he attained the fourth year of his age; about which time he was ſent, with an attendant, to a day-ſchool in the neighbourhood, that (to uſe his good mother's own expreſſion) he might be out of harm's way. Here, however, he made little progreſs, except miſchief, which he practiſed with impunity, becauſe the ſchool-miſtreſs would run no riſk of diſobliging a lady of fortune, by exerciſing unneceſſary ſeverities upon her only child. Nevertheleſs, Mrs. Pickle was not ſo blindly partial as to be pleaſed with ſuch unſeaſonable indulgence. Perry was taken out of the hands of this courteous teacher, and committed to the inſtruction of a pedagogue, who was ordered to adminiſter ſuch correction as the boy ſhould in his opinion deſerve. This authority he did not neglect to uſe; his pupil was regularly flogged twice a day, and after having been ſubjected to this courſe of diſcipline for the ſpace of eighteen months, declared the moſt obſtinate, dull, and untoward genius, that ever had fallen under his cultivation; inſtead of being reformed, he ſeemed rather hardened and confirmed in his vicious

inclinations, and was dead to all ſenſe of fear as well as ſhame. His mother was extremely mortified at theſe ſymptoms of ſtupidity, which ſhe conſidered as an inheritance derived from the ſpirit of his father, and conſequently inſurmountable by all the efforts of human care. But the commodore rejoiced over the ruggedneſs of his nature, and was particularly pleaſed when upon inquiry he found that Perry had beaten all the boys in the ſchool; a circumſtance from which he prognoſticated every thing that was fair and fortunate in his future fate; obſerving, that at his age he himſelf was juſt ſuch another. The boy, who was now turned of ſix, having profited ſo little under the birch of his unſparing governor, Mrs. Pickle was counſelled to ſend him to a boarding-ſchool not far from London, which was kept by a certain perſon very eminent for his ſucceſsful method of education. This advice ſhe the more readily embraced, becauſe at that time ſhe found herſelf pretty far gone with another child, that ſhe hoped would conſole her for the diſappointment ſhe had met with in the unpromiſing talents of Perry, or at any rate divide her concern, ſo as to enable her to endure the abſence of either.

CHAP. XII.

Peregrine is ſent to a Boarding-School, becomes remarkable for his Genius and Ambition.

THE commodore underſtanding her determination, to which her huſband did not venture to make the leaſt objection, intereſted himſelf ſo much in behalf of his favourite, as to fit him out at his own charge, and accompany him in perſon to the place of his deſtination; where he defrayed the expence of his entrance, and left him to the particular care and inſpection of the uſher, who having been recommended to him as a perſon of parts and integrity, received *per* advance a handſome conſideration for the taſk he undertook.

Nothing could be better judged than this piece of liberality: the aſſiſtant was actually a man of learning, probity, and good-ſenſe; and though obliged by the

ſcandalous adminiſtration of fortune to act in the character of an inferior teacher, had, by his ſole capacity and application, brought the ſchool to that degree of reputation which it never could have obtained from the talents of his ſuperior. He had eſtabliſhed an œconomy, which, though regular, was not at all ſevere, by enacting a body of laws ſuited to the age and comprehenſion of every individual; and each tranſgreſſor was fairly tried by his peers, and puniſhed according to the verdict of the jury. No boy was ſcourged for want of apprehenſion, but a ſpirit of emulation was raiſed by well-timed praiſe and artful compariſon, and maintained by a diſtribution of ſmall prizes, which were adjudged to thoſe who ſignalized themſelves either by their induſtry, ſobriety, or genius. This tutor, whoſe name was Jennings, began with Perry, according to his conſtant maxim, by examining the ſoil; that is, ſtudying his temper, in order to conſult the bias of his diſpoſition, which was ſtrangely perverted by the abſurd diſcipline he had undergone. He found him in a ſtate of ſullen inſenſibility, which the child had gradually contracted in a long courſe of ſtupifying correction; and at firſt he was not in the leaſt actuated by that commendation which animated the reſt of his ſchool-fellows; nor was it in the power of reproach to excite his ambition, which had been buried, as it were, in the grave of diſgrace; the uſher therefore had recourſe to contemptuous neglect, with which he affected to treat this ſtubborn ſpirit, foreſeeing, that if he retained any ſeeds of ſentiment, this weather would infallibly raiſe them into vegetation. His judgment was juſtified by the event; the boy in a little time began to make obſervations; he perceived the marks of diſtinction with which virtue was rewarded, grew aſhamed of the deſpicable figure he himſelf made among his companions, who, far from courting, rather ſhunned his converſation; and actually pined at his own want of importance.

Mr. Jennings ſaw and rejoiced at his mortification, which he ſuffered to proceed as far as poſſible, without

endangering

endangering his health. The child loſt all reliſh for diverſion, loathed his food, grew penſive, ſolitary, and was frequently found weeping by himſelf. Theſe ſymptoms plainly evinced the recovery of his feelings, to which his governor thought it now high time to make application; and therefore, by little and little, altered his behaviour from the indifference he had put on, to the appearance of more regard and attention. This produced a favourable change in the boy, whoſe eyes ſparkled with ſatisfaction one day, when his maſter expreſſed himſelf with a ſhew of ſurprize in theſe words. 'So, Perry! I find you don't want genius, when you think proper to uſe it.' Such encomiums kindled the ſpirit of emulation in his little breaſt; he exerted himſelf with ſurprizing alacrity, by which he ſoon acquitted himſelf of the imputation of dulneſs, and obtained ſeveral honorary ſilver pennies, as acknowledgments of his application: his ſchool-fellows now ſolicited his friendſhip as eagerly as they had avoided it before; and in leſs than a twelvemonth after his arrival, this ſuppoſed dunce was remarkable for the brightneſs of his parts; having in that ſhort period learnt to read Engliſh perfectly well, made great progreſs in writing, enabled himſelf to ſpeak the French language without heſitation, and acquired ſome knowledge in the rudiments of the Latin tongue. The uſher did not fail to tranſmit an account of his proficiency to the commodore, who received it with tranſport, and forthwith communicated the happy tidings to the parents.

Mr. Gamaliel Pickle, who was never ſubject to violent emotions, heard them with a ſort of phlegmatick ſatisfaction, that ſcarce manifeſted itſelf either in his countenance or expreſſions; nor did the child's mother break forth into that rapture and admiration which might have been expected, when ſhe underſtood how much the talents of her firſt-born had exceeded the hope of her warmeſt imagination. Not but that ſhe profeſſed herſelf well pleaſed with Perry's reputation; though ſhe obſerved, that in theſe commendations the truth was al-

ways exaggerated by ſchool-maſters, for their own in
tereſt; and pretended to wonder that the uſher had not
mingled more probability with his praiſe. Trunnion
was offended at her indifference and want of faith, and
believing that ſhe refined too much in her diſcernment
ſwore that Jennings had declared the truth, and nothing
but the truth; for he himſelf had propheſied from th
beginning, that the boy would turn out a credit to hi
family. But by this time Mrs. Pickle was bleſſed wit
a daughter, whom ſhe had brought into the world abou
ſix months before the intelligence arrived; ſo that he
care and affection being otherwiſe engroſſed, the prai
of Perry was the leſs greedily devoured. The abate
ment of her fondneſs was an advantage to his educatio
which would have been retarded, and perhaps, ruine
by pernicious indulgence and prepoſterous interpoſitio
had her love conſidered him as an only child; where
her concern being now diverted to another object tha
ſhared, at leaſt, one half of her affection, he was left to
the management of his preceptor, who tutored him
cording to his own plan, without any let or interru
tion. Indeed, all his ſagacity and circumſpection we
but barely ſufficient to keep the young gentleman in
der; for now that he had won the palm of victory fr
his rivals in point of ſcholarſhip, his ambition dilate
and he was ſeized with a deſire of ſubjecting the wh
ſchool by the valour of his arm. Before he could bri
his project to bear, innumerable battles were foug
with various ſucceſs; every day a bloody noſe and co
plaint were preſented againſt him, and his own viſa
commonly bore ſome livid marks of obſtinate conte
tion. At length, however, he accompliſhed his ai
his adverſaries were ſubdued, his prowes acknow
ledged, and he obtained the laurel in war as well as in
wit. Thus triumphant, he was intoxicated with ſu
ceſs. His pride roſe in proportion to his power, and
ſpite of all the endeavours of Jennings, who practi
every method he could invent for curbing his licenti
conduct, without depreſſing his ſpirit, he contracted
larg

large proportion of insolence, which a series of misfortunes that happened to him in the sequel could scarce effectually tame. Nevertheless, there was a fund of good nature and generosity in his composition; and though he established a tyranny among his comrades, the tranquillity of his reign was maintained by the love rather than by the fear of his subjects.

In the midst of all this enjoyment of empire, he never once violated that respectful awe with which the usher had found means to inspire him; but he by no means preserved the same regard for the principal master, an old illiterate German quack, who had formerly practised corn-cutting among the quality, and sold cosmetick washes to the ladies, together with teeth-powders, hair-dying liquors, prolifick elixirs, and tinctures, to sweeten the breath. These nostrums, recommended by the art of cringing, in which he was consummate, ingratiated him so much with people of fashion, that he was enabled to set up school with five and twenty boys of the best families, whom he boarded on his own terms, and undertook to instruct in the French and Latin languages, so as to qualify them for the colleges of Westminster and Eton. While this plan was in its infancy, he was so fortunate as to meet with Jennings, who for the paltry consideration of thirty pounds a year, which his necessities compelled him to accept, took the whole trouble of educating the children upon himself, contrived an excellent system for that purpose, and by his assiduity and knowledge executed all the particulars to the entire satisfaction of those concerned; who, by the bye, never enquired into his qualifications, but suffered the other to enjoy the fruits of his labour and ingenuity.

Over and above a large stock of avarice, ignorance, and vanity, this superior had certain ridiculous peculiarities in his person, such as a hunch upon his back, and distorted limbs, that seemed to attract the satirical notice of Peregrine; who, young as he was, took offence at his want of reverence for his usher, over whom he sometimes chose opportunities of displaying his authority,

thority, that the boys might not diſplace their veneration. Mr. Keypſtick, therefore, ſuch as I have deſcribed him, incurred the contempt and diſpleaſure of this enterprizing pupil, who now being in the tenth year of his age, had capacity enough to give him abundance of vexation. He underwent many mortifying jokes from the invention of Pickle and his confederates; ſo that he began to entertain ſuſpicion of Mr. Jennings, who he could not help thinking had been at the bottom of them all, and ſpirited up principles of rebellion in the ſchool, with a view of making himſelf independent. Poſſeſſed of this chimera, which was void of all foundation, the German deſcended ſo low as to tamper in private with the boys, from whom he hoped to draw ſome very important diſcovery; but he was diſappointed in his expectation; and this mean practice reaching the ears of his uſher, he voluntarily reſigned his employment. Finding intereſt to obtain holy orders in a little time after, he left the kingdom, hoping to find a ſettlement in ſome of our American plantations.

The departure of Mr. Jennings produced a great revolution in the affairs of Keypſtick, which declined from that moment, becauſe he had neither authority to enforce obedience, nor prudence to maintain order among his ſcholars; ſo that the ſchool degenerated into anarchy and confuſion, and he himſelf dwindled in the opinion of his employers, who looked upon him as ſuperannuated, and withdrew their children from his tuition.

Peregrine ſeeing this diſſolution of their ſociety, and finding himſelf every day deprived of ſome companion, began to repine at his ſituation, and reſolved, if poſſible, to procure his releaſe from the juriſdiction of the perſon whom he both deteſted and deſpiſed. With this view he went to work, and compoſed the following billet, addreſſed to the commodore, which was the firſt ſpecimen of his compoſition in the epiſtolary way.

'HONOURED AND LOVING UNCLE,

'HOPING you are in good health, this 'ferves to inform you, that Mr. Jennings is gone, and 'Mr. Keypftick will never meet with his fellow. The 'fchool is already almoft broke up, and the reft daily 'going away; and I beg of you of all love to have me 'fetched away alfo, for I cannot bear to be any longer 'under one who is a perfect ignoramus, who fcarce 'knows the declination of *mufa*, and is more fit to be 'a fcare-crow than a fchool-mafter; hoping you will 'fend for me foon, with my love to my aunt, and my 'duty to my honoured parents, craving their bleffing 'and yours. And this is all at prefent from, honoured 'uncle, your well-beloved and dutiful nephew and god-'fon, and humble fervant to command till death,

'PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

Trunnion was overjoyed at the receipt of this letter, which he looked upon as one of the greateft efforts of human genius, and as fuch communicated the contents to his lady, whom he had difturbed for the purpofe in the middle of her devotion, by fending a meffage to her clofet, whither it was her cuftom very frequently to retire. She was out of humour at being interrupted, and therefore did not perufe this fpecimen of her nephew's underftanding with all the relifh that the commodore himfelf had enjoyed; on the contrary, after fundry paralytical endeavours to fpeak, (for her tongue fometimes refufed its office) fhe obferved that the boy was a pert jackanapes, and deferved to be feverely chaftifed for treating his betters with fuch difrefpect. Her hufband undertook his godfon's defence, reprefenting with great warmth that he knew Keypftick to be a good for nothing, pimping old rafcal, and that Perry fhewed a great deal of fpirit and good fenfe in defiring to be taken from under his command; he therefore declared that the boy fhould not live a week longer with fuch a fhambling fon of a bitch, and fanctioned his declaration with abundance of oaths. Mrs.

Mrs. Trunnion compofing her countenance into a look of religious demurenefs, rebuked him for his profane way of talking; and afked him, in a magifterial tone, if he intended never to lay afide that brutal behaviour. Irritated at this reproach, he anfwered in terms of indignation, that he knew how to behave himfelf as well as e'er a woman that wore a head; bade her mind her own affairs, and with another repetition of oaths, gave her to underftand that he would be mafter in his own houfe.

This infinuation operated upon her fpirits like friction upon a glafs globe; her face gleamed with refentment, and every pore feemed to emit particles of flame. She replied with incredible fluency of the bittereft expreffions. He retorted equal rage in broken hints and incoherent imprecations. She rejoined with redoubled fury, and in conclufion he was fain to betake himfelf to flight, ejaculating curfes againft her; and muttering fomething concerning the brandy-bottle, which, however, he took care fhould never reach her ears.

From his own houfe he went directly to vifit Mrs. Pickle, to whom he imparted Peregrine's epiftle, with many encomiums upon the boy's promifing parts; and finding his commendations but coldly received, defired fhe would permit him to take his godfon under his own care.

This lady, whofe family was now increafed by another fon, who feemed to ingrofs her care for the prefent, had not feen Perry during a courfe of four years, and with regard to him, was perfectly weaned of that infirmity known by the name of maternal fondnefs; fhe therefore confented to the commodore's requeft with great condefcenfion, and a polite compliment to him on the concern he had all along manifefted for the welfare of the child.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

The Commodore takes Peregrine under his own Care. The Boy arrives at the Garrison; is strangely received by his own Mother; enters into a Confederacy with Hatchway and Pipes, and executes a Couple of waggish Enterprizes upon his Aunt.

TRUNNION having obtained this permission, that very afternoon dispatched the lieutenant in a post-chaise to Keypstick's house, from whence in two days he returned with our young hero; who being now in the eleventh year of his age, had out-grown the expectation of all his family, and was remarkable for the beauty and elegance of his person. His godfather was transported at his arrival, as if he had been actually the issue of his own loins. He shook him heartily by the hand, turned him round and round, surveyed him from top to bottom, bade Hatchway take notice how handsomely he was built; squeezed his hand again, saying, 'D—n ye, you dog! I suppose you don't value such an old crazy son of a bitch as me a rope's end. You have forgot how I wont to dandle you on my knee, when you was a little urchin no bigger than the davit, and played a thousand tricks upon me, burning my bacco-pouches, and poisoning my rumbo—O! d—n ye, you can grin fast enough, I see; I warrant you have learnt more things than writing and the Latin lingo.' Even Tom Pipes expressed uncommon satisfaction on this joyful occasion; and coming up to Perry, thrust forth his fore-paw, and accosted him with the salutation of—'What chear, my young master? I am glad to see thee with all my heart!' These compliments being past, his uncle halted to the door of his wife's chamber, at which he stood hallooing—'Here's your kinsman Perry, belike you won't come and bid him welcome.'—'Lord! Mr. Trunnion,' said she, 'why will you continually harrass me in this manner with your impertinent intrusion?'—'I harrow you!' replied the commodore; ''sblood! I believe your upper works are damaged! I only came to inform

inform you that here was your coufin, whom you have not feen thefe four long years; and I'll be d—n'd if there is fuch another of his age within the king's dominions, d'ye fee, either for make or mettle! he's a credit to the name, d'ye fee; but, d—n my eyes! I'll fay no more of the matter; if you come you may, if you won't you may let it alone.'—'Well, I won't come then,' anfwered his yoke-fellow, 'for I am at prefent more agreeably employed.'—'Oho! you are? I believe fo too!' cried the commodore, making wry faces and mimicking the action of dram-drinking. Then addreffing himfelf to Hatchway, 'Pr'ythee, Jack,' faid he, 'go and try thy fkill on that ftubborn hulk; if any body can bring her about, I know you wool.' The lieutenant accordingly taking his ftation at the door, conveyed his perfuafion in thefe words: 'What, won't you turn out and hail little Perry? It will do your heart good to fee fuch a handfome young dog; I'm fure he is the very moral of you, and as like as if he had been fpit out of your own mouth, as the faying is: do fhew a little refpect for your kinfman, can't you?' To this remonftrance fhe replied in a mild tone of voice, 'Dear Mr. Hatchway, you are always teazing one in fuch a manner; fure I am, nobody can tax me with unkindnefs, or want of natural affection.' So faying, fhe opened the door, and advancing to the hall where her nephew ftood, received him very gracioufly, and obferved that he was the very image of her papa.

In the afternoon he was conducted by the commodore to the houfe of his parents; and, ftrange to tell, no fooner was he prefented to his mother, than her countenance changed, fhe eyed him with tokens of affliction and furprize, and burfting into tears, exclaimed her child was dead, and this was no other than an impoftor whom they had brought to defraud her forrow. Trunnion was confounded at this unaccountable paffion, which had no other foundation than caprice and whim; and Gamaliel himfelf fo difconcerted and unfettled in his own belief, which began to waver, that he knew not how to behave

behave towards the boy, whom his godfather immediately carried back to the garrifon, fwearing all the way that Perry fhould never crofs their threfhold again with his good-will. Nay, fo much was he incenfed at this unnatural and abfurd renunciation, that he refufed to carry on any farther correfpondence with Pickle, until he was appeafed by his folicitations and fubmiffion, and Peregrine owned as his fon and heir. But this acknowledgment was made without the privity of his wife, whofe vicious averfion he was obliged, in appearance, to adopt. Thus exiled from his father's houfe, the young gentleman was left entirely to the difpofal of the commodore, whofe affection for him daily increafed, infomuch that he could fcarce prevail upon himfelf to part with him, when his education abfolutely required that he fhould be otherwife difpofed of.

In all probability, this extraordinary attachment was, if not produced, at leaft riveted, by that peculiar turn in Peregrine's imagination, which we have already obferved; and which, during his refidence in the caftle, appeared in fundry ftratagems he practifed upon his uncle and aunt, under the aufpices of Mr. Hatchway, who affifted him in the contrivance and execution of all his fchemes. Nor was Pipes exempted from a fhare in their undertakings; for, being a trufty fellow, not without dexterity in fome cafes, and altogether refigned to their will, they found him a ferviceable inftrument for their purpofe, and ufed him accordingly.

The firft fample of their art was exhibited upon Mrs. Trunnion. They terrified that good lady with ftrange noifes when fhe retired to her devotion. Pipes was a natural genius in the compofition of difcords; he could imitate the found produced by the winding of a jack, the filing of a faw, and the fwinging of a malefactor hanging in chains; he could counterfeit the braying of an afs, the fcreeching of a night-owl, the caterwauling of cats, the howling of a dog, the fqueaking of a pig, the crowing of a cock: and he had learned the war-hoop, uttered by the Indians in North America. Thefe talents

lents were exerted ſucceſſively, at different times and places, to the terror of Mrs. Trunnion, the diſcompoſure of the commodore himſelf, and the conſternation of all the ſervants in the caſtle. Peregrine, with a ſheet over his cloaths, ſometimes tumbled before his aunt in the twilight, when her organs of viſion were a little impaired by the cordial ſhe had ſwallowed; and the boatſwain's-mate taught him to ſhoe cats with walnut-ſhells, ſo that they made a moſt dreadful clattering in their nocturnal excurſions. The mind of Mrs. Trunnion was not a little diſturbed by theſe alarms, which, in her opinion, portended the death of ſome principal perſon in her family; ſhe redoubled her religious exerciſes, and fortified her ſpirits with freſh potations; nay, ſhe began to take notice that Mr. Trunnion's conſtitution was very much broke, and ſeemed diſſatisfied when people obſerved that they never ſaw him look better. Her frequent viſits to the cloſet, where all her conſolation was depoſited, inſpired the confederates with a device which had like to have been attended with tragical conſequences. They found an opportunity to infuſe jallap in one of her caſe-bottles; and ſhe took ſo largely of this medicine, that her conſtitution had well nigh ſunk under the violence of its effect. She ſuffered a ſucceſſion of fainting fits that reduced her to the brink of the grave, in ſpite of all the remedies that were adminiſtered by a phyſician who was called in the beginning of her diſorder. After having examined the ſymptoms, he declared that the patient had been poiſoned with arſenic, and preſcribed oily draughts and lubricating injections, to defend the coats of the ſtomach and inteſtines from the vellicating particles of that pernicious mineral; at the ſame time hinting, with a look of infinite ſagacity, that it was not difficult to divine the whole myſtery. He affected to deplore the poor lady, as if ſhe was expoſed to more attempts of the ſame nature; thereby glancing obliquely at the innocent commodore, whom the officious ſon of Æſculapius ſuſpected as the author of this expedient, to rid his hands of a yoke-fel-

low

low for whom he was well-known to have no great devotion. This impertinent and malicious inſinuation made ſome impreſſion upon the by-ſtanders, and furniſhed ample field for ſlander, to aſperſe the morals of Trunnion, who was repreſented throughout the whole diſtrict as a monſter of barbarity. Nay, the ſufferer herſelf, though ſhe behaved with great decency and prudence, could not help entertaining ſome ſmall diffidence of her huſband; not that ſhe imagined he had any deſign upon her life, but that he had been at pains to adulterate the brandy, with a view of detaching her from that favourite liquor.

On this ſuppoſition, ſhe reſolved to act with more caution for the future, without ſetting on foot any inquiry about the affair; while the commodore, imputing her indiſpoſition to ſome natural cauſe, after the danger was paſt, never beſtowed a thought upon the ſubject; ſo that the perpetrators were quit of their fear, which, however, had puniſhed them ſo effectually, that they never would hazard any more jokes of the ſame nature.

The ſhafts of their wit were now directed againſt the commander himſelf, whom they teazed and terrified almoſt out of his ſenſes. One day, while he was at dinner, Pipes came and told him, that there was a perſon below that wanted to ſpeak with him immediately about an affair of the greateſt importance, that would admit of no delay: upon which he ordered the ſtranger to be told that he was engaged, and that he muſt ſend up his name and buſineſs. To this demand he received for anſwer a meſſage, importing that the perſon's name was unknown to him, and his buſineſs of ſuch a nature, that it could not be diſcloſed to any one but the commodore himſelf, whom he earneſtly deſired to ſee without loſs of time.

Trunnion, ſurprized at this importunity, got up with great reluctance in the middle of his meal, and deſcending to a parlour where the ſtranger was, aſked in a ſurly tone what he wanted with him in ſuch a damned hurry, that

that he could not wait till he had made an end of his mess. The other, not at all disconcerted at this rough address, advanced close up to him on his tiptoes, and with a look of confidence and conceit, laying his mouth to one side of the commodore's head, whispered softly in his ear, 'Sir, I am the attorney whom you wanted to converse with in private.'—'The attorney!' cried Trunnion, staring and half choaked with choler. 'Yes, Sir, at your service,' replied this retainer to the law; 'and if you please, the sooner we dispatch the affair the better; for it is an old observation, that delay breeds danger.'—'Truly, brother,' said the commodore, who could no longer contain himself, 'I do confess that I am very much of your way of thinking, d'ye see; and therefore you shall be dispatched in a trice, so saying; he lifted up his walking staff, which was something between a crutch and a cudgel, and discharged it with such energy on the seat of the attorney's understanding, that if there had been any thing but solid bone, the contents of his skull must have been evacuated.

Fortified as he was by nature against all such assaults, he could not withstand the momentum of the blow, which in an instant laid him flat on the floor, deprived of all sense and motion; and Trunnion hopped up stairs to dinner, applauding himself in ejaculations all the way for the vengeance he had taken on such an impudent pettifogging miscreant.

The attorney no sooner awaked from his trance, into which he had been so unexpectedly lulled, that he cast his eyes around in quest of evidence, by which he might be enabled the more easily to prove the injury he had sustained; but not a soul appearing, he made shift to get upon his legs again, and with the blood trickling over his nose, followed one of the servants into the dining-room, resolved to come to an explanation with the assailant, and either extort money from him by way of satisfaction, or provoke him to a second application before witnesses. With this view he entered the room in a peal of clamour, to the amazement of all present, and the

the terror of Mrs. Trunnion, who ſhrieked at the appearance of ſuch a ſpectacle; and addreſſing himſelf to the commodore, 'I'll tell you what, Sir,' ſaid he, 'if there be law in England, I'll make you ſmart for this here aſſault; you think you have ſcreened yourſelf from a proſecution, by ſending all your ſervants out of the way, but that circumſtance will appear upon trial to be a plain proof of the malice prepenſe with which the fact was committed: eſpecially when corroborated by the evidence of this here letter, under your own hand, whereby I am deſired to come to your own houſe to tranſact an affair conſequence.' So ſaying, he produced the writing, and read the contents in theſe words:

'MR. ROGER RAVINE,

'SIR,

'BEING in a manner priſoner in my own 'houſe, I deſire you will give me a call preciſely at 'three o'clock in the afternoon, and inſiſt upon ſeeing 'myſelf, as I have an affair of great conſequence, in 'which your particular advice is wanted by your hum-'ble ſervant,

'HAWSER TRUNNION.'

The one-eyed commander, who had been ſatisfied with the chaſtiſement he had already beſtowed upon the plaintiff, hearing him read this audacious piece of forgery, which he conſidered as the effect of his own villainy, ſtarted up from table, and ſeizing a huge turkey that lay in a diſh before him, would have applied it ſauce and all by way of poultice to his wound, had he not been reſtrained by Hatchway, who laid faſt hold on both his arms, and fixed him to his chair again, adviſing the attorney to ſheer off with what he had got. Far from following this ſalutary counſel, he redoubled his threats, and ſet Trunnion at defiance; telling him he was not a man of true courage, although he had commanded a ſhip of war, or elſe he would not have attacked any perſon in ſuch a clandeſtine and cowardly manner. This provocation would have anſwered his purpoſe effectually, had

had not his adverſary's indignation been repreſſed by the ſuggeſtions of the lieutenant, who deſired his friend in a whiſper to be eaſy, for he would take care to have the attorney toſſed in a blanket for his preſumption. This propoſal, which he received with great approbation, pacified him in a moment; he wiped the ſweat from his forehead, and his features relaxed into a grim ſmile.

Hatchway diſappeared, and Ravine proceeded with great fluency of abuſe, until he was interrupted by the arrival of Pipes; who, without any expoſtulation, led him out by the hand, and conducted him to the yard, where he was put into a carpet, and in a twinkling ſent into the air by the ſtrength and dexterity of five ſtout operators, whom the lieutenant had ſelected from the number of domeſticks for that ſingular ſpell of duty.

In vain did the aſtoniſhed vaulter beg for the love of God and paſſion of Chriſt, that they would take pity upon him, and put an end to his involuntary gambols; they were deaf to his prayers and proteſtations, even when he ſwore in the moſt ſolemn manner, that if they would ceaſe tormenting him, he would forget and forgive what was paſt, and depart in peace to his own habitation; and continued the game till they were fatigued with the exerciſe.

Ravine being diſmiſſed in a moſt melancholy plight, brought an action of aſſault and battery againſt the commodore, and ſubpœnaed all the ſervants as evidences in the cauſe; but as none of them had ſeen what happened, he did not find his account in the proſecution, though he himſelf examined the witneſſes; and among other queſtions, aſked whether they had not ſeen him come in like another man; and whether they had ever ſeen any other man in ſuch a condition as that in which he had crawled off. But this laſt interrogation they were not obliged to anſwer, becauſe it had reference to the ſecond diſcipline he had undergone, in which they, and they only were concerned; and no perſon is bound to give teſtimony againſt himſelf.

In ſhort, the attorney was nonſuited, to the ſatisfac-

tion

tion of all who knew him; and found himſelf under the neceſſity of proving that he had received in courſe of poſt, the letter which was declared in court a ſcandalous forgery, in order to prevent an indictment with which he was threatened by the commodore, who little dreamed that the whole affair had been planned and executed by Peregrine and his aſſociates.

The next enterprize in which this triumvirate engaged, was a ſcheme to frighten Trunnion with an apparition, which they prepared and exhibited in this manner. To the hide of a large ox, Pipes fitted a leathern vizor of a moſt terrible appearance, ſtretched on the jaws of a ſhark, which he had brought from ſea, and accommodated with a couple of broad glaſſes inſtead of eyes. On the inſide of theſe he placed two ruſh-lights; and with a compoſition of ſulphur and ſaltpetre, made a pretty large fuſe, which he fixed between two rows of the teeth. This equipage being finiſhed, he, one dark night choſen for the purpoſe, put it on; and following the commodore into a long paſſage, in which he was preceded by Perry with a light in his hand, kindled his fire-work with a match, and began to bellow like a bull. The boy, as was concerted, looking behind him, ſcreamed aloud, and dropped the light, which was extinguiſhed in the fall; when Trunnion, alarmed at his nephew's conſternation, exclaimed—'Zounds! what's the matter?' And turning about to ſee the cauſe of his diſmay, beheld a hideous phantom vomiting blue flame, which aggravated the horrors of its aſpect. He was inſtantly ſeized with an agony of fear, which diveſted him of his reaſon; nevertheleſs, he, as it were mechanically, raiſed his truſty ſupporter in his own defence, and the apparition advancing towards him, aimed it at this dreadful annoyance with ſuch a convulſive exertion of ſtrength, that had not the blow chanced to light upon one of the horns, Mr. Pipes would have had no cauſe to value himſelf upon his invention. Miſapplied as it was, he did not fail to ſtagger at the ſhock, and dreading another ſuch ſalutation,

 cloſed

closed with the commodore, and having tripped up his heels, retreated with great expedition.

It was then that Peregrine, pretending to recollect himself a little, ran with all the marks of disturbance and affright, and called up the servants to the assistance of their master, whom they found in a cold sweat upon the floor, his features betokening horror and confusion. Hatchway raised him up, and having comforted him with a cup of Nantz, began to enquire into the cause of his disorder; but he could not extract one word of an answer from his friend; who, after a considerable pause, during which he seemed to be wrapped up in profound contemplation, pronounced aloud—'By the Lord! Jack, you may say what you wool; but I'll be damned if it was not Davy Jones himself. I know him by his saucer-eyes, his three rows of teeth, his horns and tail, and the blue smoke that came out of his nostrils. What does the black-guard hell's-baby want with me? I'm sure I never committed murder, except in the way of my profession, not wronged any man whatsomever, since I first went to sea.' This same Davy Jones, according to the mythology of sailors, is the fiend that presides over all the evil spirits of the deep, and is often seen in various shapes, perching among the rigging on the eve of hurricanes, ship-wrecks, and other disasters to which a sea-faring life is exposed; *warning the devoted wretch of death and woe*. No wonder, then, that Trunnion was disturbed by a supposed visit of this dæmon; which in his opinion, foreboded some dreadful calamity.

CHAP. XIV.

He is also by their Device engaged in an Adventure with the Exciseman, who does not find his Account in his own Drollery.

HOWEVER preposterous and unaccountable that passion may be, which prompts persons, otherwise generous and sympathizing, to afflict and perplex their fellow-creatures, certain it is, our confederates entertained such a large proportion of it, that not satisfied with

with the pranks they had already played, they ſtill perſecuted the commodore without ceaſing. In the courſe of his own hiſtory, the particulars of which he delighted to recount, he had often rehearſed an adventure of deer-ſtealing, in which (during the unthinking impetuoſity of his youth) he had been unfortunately concerned. Far from ſucceeding in that atchievement, he and his aſſociates had (it ſeems) been made priſoner, after an obſtinate engagement with the keepers, and carried before a neighbouring juſtice of the peace, who uſed Trunnion with great indignity, and with his companions committed him to jail.

His own relations, and in particular an uncle on whom he chiefly depended, treated him during his confinement with great rigour and inhumanity, and abſolutely refuſed to interpoſe his influence in his behalf, unleſs he would ſign a writing, obliging himſelf to go to ſea within thirty days after his releaſe, under the penalty of being proceeded againſt as a felon. The alternative was either to undergo this voluntary exile, or remain in priſon diſowned and deſerted by every body, and after all ſuffer an ignominious trial, that might end in a ſentence of tranſportation for life. He therefore, without much heſitation, embraced the propoſal of his kinſman, and (as he obſerved) was in leſs than a month after his diſcharge turned adrift to the mercy of the wind and waves.

Since that period he had never maintained any correſpondence with his relations, all of whom had concurred in ſending him off; nor would he ever pay the leaſt regard to the humiliations and ſupplications of ſome among them, who had proſtrated themſelves before him on the advancement of his fortune: but he retained a moſt inveterate reſentment againſt his uncle, who was ſtill in being, though extremely old and infirm, and frequently mentioned his name with all the bitterneſs of revenge.

Perry being perfectly well acquainted with the particulars of this ſtory, which he had heard ſo often repeat-

ed, propoſed to Hatchway, that a perſon ſhould be hired to introduce himſelf to the commodore, with a ſuppoſititious letter of recommendation from this deteſted kinſman; an impoſition that, in all likelihood, would afford abundance of diverſion.

The lieutenant reliſhed the ſcheme, and young Pickle having compoſed an epiſtle for the occaſion, the exciſeman of the pariſh, a fellow of great impudence, and ſome humour, in whom Hatchway could confide, undertook to tranſcribe and deliver it with his own hand, and alſo perſonate the man in whoſe favour it was feigned to be writ. He, accordingly, one morning arrived on horſeback at the garriſon, two hours at leaſt before Trunnion uſed to get up, and gave Pipes, who admitted him, to underſtand, that he had a letter for his maſter, which he was ordered to deliver to none but the commodore himſelf. This meſſage was no ſooner communicated, than the indignant chief (who had been waked for the purpoſe) began to curſe the meſſenger for breaking his reſt, and ſwore he would not budge till his uſual time of turning out. This reſolution being conveyed to the ſtranger, he deſired the carrier to go back and tell him, he had ſuch joyful tidings to impart, that he was ſure the commodore would think himſelf happily rewarded for his trouble, even if he had been raiſed from the grave to receive them.

This aſſurance, flattering as it was, would not have been powerful enough to perſuade him, had it not been aſſiſted with the exhortations of his ſpouſe, which never failed to influence his conduct. He therefore crept out of bed, though not without great repugnance, and wrapping himſelf in his morning gown, was ſupported down ſtairs, rubbing his eye, yawning fearfully, and grumbling all the way. As ſoon as he popped his head into the parlour, the ſuppoſed ſtranger made many aukward bows, and with a grinning aſpect accoſted him in theſe words—‘ Your moſt humble ſervant, moſt noble commodore! I hope you are in good health; you look pure and hearty; and if it was not for that misfortune of

of your eye, one would not desire to see a more pleasant countenance in a summer's day. Sure as I am a living soul, one would take you to be on this side of threescore. Laud help us! I should have known you to have been a Trunnion if I had met with you in the midst of Salisbury Plain, as the saying is.' The commodore, who was not at all in the humour of relishing such an impertinent preamble, interrupted him in this place, saying, with a peevish accent—'Pshaw! pshaw! brother, there's no occasion to bowse out so much unnecessary gum; if you can't bring your discourse to bear on the right subject, you had much better clap a stopper on your tongue, and bring yourself up, d'ye see: I was told you had something to deliver.'—'Deliver!' cried the waggish impostor, 'odds heart! I have got something for you that will make your very entrails rejoice within your body. Here's a letter from a dear and worthy friend of yours. Take, read it, and be happy. Blessings on his old heart, one would think he had renewed his age, like the eagles.' Trunnion's expection being thus raised, he called for his spectacles, adjusted them to his eye, took the letter, and being curious to know the subscription, no sooner perceived his uncle's name, than he started back, his lip quivered, and he began to shake in every limb with resentment and surprize: nevertheless, eager to know the subject of an epistle from a person who had never before troubled him with any sort of address, he endeavoured to recollect himself, and perused the contents, which were these—

'LOVING NEPHEW,

'I DOUBT not but you will rejoice to hear 'of my welfare; and well you may, considering what a 'kind uncle I have been to you in the days of your 'youth, and how little you deserved any such thing; 'for you always was a graceless young man, given to 'wicked courses and bad company, whereby you would 'have come to a shameful end, had it not been for my

'care in ſending you out of miſchief's way. But this 'is not the cauſe of my preſent writing. The bearer, 'Mr. Timothy Trickle, is a diſtant relation of yours, 'being the ſon of the couſin of your aunt Margery, and 'is not over and above well as to worldly matters. He 'thinks of going to London, to ſee for ſome poſt in the 'exciſe or cuſtoms, if ſo be that you will recommend 'him to ſome great man of your acquaintance, and give 'him a ſmall matter to keep him till he is provided. I 'doubt not, nephew, but you will be glad to ſerve him, 'if it was no more but for the reſpect you bear to me, 'who am, loving nephew, your affectionate uncle, and 'ſervant to command,

'TOBIAH TRUNNION.'

It would be a difficult taſk for the inimitable Hogarth himſelf to exhibit the ludicrous expreſſion of the commodore's countenance while he read this letter. It was not a ſtare of aſtoniſhment, a convulſion of rage, or a ghaſtly grin of revenge, but an aſſociation of all three, that took poſſeſſion of his features. At length he hawked up, with incredible ſtraining, the interjection—'Ah!' that ſeemed to have ſtuck ſome time in his windpipe, and thus gave vent to his indignation—'Have I come along ſide of you at laſt, you old ſtinking curmudgeon! you lie, you louſy hulk, ye lie! you did all in your power to founder me when I was a ſtripling; and as for being graceleſs, and wicked, and keeping bad company, you tell a damned lie again, you thief! there was not a more peaceable lad in the county, and I kept no bad company but your own, d'ye ſee. Therefore, you Trickle, or what's your name, tell the old raſcal that ſent you hither, that I ſpit in his face, and call him *horſe*; and that I tear his letter into rags, ſo; and that I trample upon it as I would upon his own villainous carcaſe, d'ye ſee!' So ſaying, he danced in a ſort of frenzy upon the fragments of the paper, which he had ſcattered about the room, to the inexpreſſible ſatisfaction of the triumvirate, who beheld the ſcene.

The exciſeman having got between him and the door, which

which was left open for his escape, in case of necessity, affected great confusion and surprize at his behaviour, saying, with an air of mortification—'Lord be merciful unto me! is this the way you treat your own relations, and the recommendation of your best friend? Surely all gratitude and virtue has left this sinful world! What will cousin Tim, and Dick, and Tom, and good mother Pipkin, and her daughters, cousin Sue, and Prue, and Peg, with all the rest of our kinsfolks say, when they hear of this unconscionable reception that I have met with? Consider, Sir, that ingratitude is worse than the sin of witchcraft, as the apostle wisely observes; and do not send me away with such unchristian usage, which will lay a heavy load of guilt upon your poor miserable soul.'—'What, you are on the cruize for a post, brother Trickle, an't ye?' said Trunnion, interrupting him; 'we shall find a post for you in a trice, my boy. Here, Pipes, take this saucy son of a bitch, belay him to the whipping-post in the yard. I'll teach you to rowce me in the morning with such impertinent messages.' Pipes, who wanted to carry the joke farther than the exciseman dreamed of, laid hold of him in a twinkling; and executed the orders of his commander, notwithstanding all his nods, winking, and significant gestures, which the boatswain's mate would by no means understand: so that he began to repent of the part he acted in this performance, which was like to end so tragically, and stood fastened to the stake, in a very disagreeable state of suspense; casting many a rueful look over his left-shoulder, (while Pipes was absent in quest of a cat and nine tails) in expectation of being relieved by the interposition of the lieutenant, who did not, however, appear. Tom returning with the instrument of correction, undressed the delinquent in a trice, and whispering in his ear that he was very sorry for being employed in such an office, but durst not for his soul disobey the orders of his commander, flourished the scourge about his head, and with admirable dexterity made such a smart application to the offender's back

and ſhoulders, that the diſtracted gauger performed ſundry new cuts with his feet, and bellowed hideouſly with pain, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the ſpectators. At length, when he was almoſt flayed from the rump to the nape of his neck, Hatchway, who had purpoſely abſented himſelf hitherto, appeared in the yard, and interpoſing in his behalf, prevailed upon Trunnion to call off the executioner, and ordered the malefactor to be releaſed.

The exciſeman, mad with the cataſtrophe he had undergone, threatened to be revenged upon his employers, by making a candid confeſſion of the whole plot; but the lieutenant giving him to underſtand, that in ſo doing he would bring upon himſelf a proſecution for fraud, forgery, and impoſture, he was fain to put up with his loſs, and ſneaked out of the garriſon, attended with a volley of curſes diſcharged upon him by the commodore, who was exceedingly irritated by the diſturbance and diſappointment he had undergone.

CHAP. XV.

The Commodore detects the Machinations of the Conſpirators, and hires a Tutor for Peregrine, whom he ſettles at Wincheſter School.

THIS was not the leaſt affliction he ſuffered from the unwearied endeavours and inexhauſted invention of his tormentors, who harraſſed him with ſuch a variety of miſchievous pranks, that he began to think all the devils in hell had conſpired againſt his peace; and accordingly became very ſerious and contemplative on the ſubject.

In the courſe of his meditations, when he recollected and compared the circumſtances of every mortification to which he had been lately expoſed, he could not help ſuſpecting that ſome of them muſt have been contrived to vex him; and as he was not ignorant of his lieutenant's diſpoſition, nor unacquainted with the talents of Peregrine, he reſolved to obſerve them both for the future with the utmoſt care and circumſpection. This reſolution, aided by the incautious conduct of the conſpirators,

ſpirators, whom, by this time, ſucceſs had rendered heedleſs and indiſcreet, was attended with the deſired effect. He in a little time detected Perry in a new plot, and by dint of a little chaſtiſement, and a great many threats, extorted from him a confeſſion of all the contrivances in which he had been concerned. The commodore was thunder-ſtruck at the diſcovery, and ſo much incenſed againſt Hatchway for the part he had acted in the whole, that he deliberated with himſelf, whether he ſhould demand ſatisfaction with ſword and piſtol, or diſmiſs him from the garriſon, and renounce all friendſhip with him at once. But he had been ſo long accuſtomed to Jack's company, that he could not live without him; and upon more cool reflection, perceiving that what he had done was rather the effect of wantonneſs than malice, which he himſelf ſhould have laughed to ſee take place upon any other perſon, he determined to devour his chagrin, and extend his forgiveneſs even to Pipes, whom, in the firſt ſally of his paſſion, he had looked upon in a more criminal light than that of a ſimple mutineer. This determination was ſeconded by another, which he thought abſolutely neceſſary for his own repoſe, and in which his own intereſt and that of his nephew concurred.

Peregrine, who was now turned of twelve, had made ſuch advances under the inſtructions of Jennings, that he often diſputed upon grammar, and was ſometimes thought to have the better in his conteſts, with the pariſh prieſt; who, notwithſtanding this acknowledged ſuperiority of his antagoniſt, did great juſtice to his genius, which he aſſured Mr. Trunnion would be loſt for want of cultivation, if the boy was not immediately ſent to proſecute his ſtudies at ſome proper ſeminary of learning.

This maxim had been more than once inculcated upon the commodore by Mrs. Trunnion; who, over and above the deference ſhe paid to the parſon's opinion, had a reaſon of her own for wiſhing to ſee the houſe clear of Peregrine, at whoſe prying diſpoſition ſhe began

gan to be very uneasy. Induced by these motives, which were joined by the solicitation of the youth himself, who ardently longed to see a little more of the world, his uncle determined forthwith to send him to Winchester, under the immediate care and inspection of a governor, to whom he allowed a very handsome appointment for that purpose. This gentleman, whose name was Mr. Jacob Jolter, had been school-fellow with the parson of the parish, who recommended him to Mrs. Trunnion as a person of great worth and learning, in every respect qualified for the office of a tutor. He likewise added by way of eulogium, that he was a man of exemplary piety, and particularly zealous for the honour of the church, of which he was a member, having been many years in holy orders, though he did not then exercise any function of the priesthood. Indeed, Mr. Jolter's zeal was so exceedingly fervent, as, on some occasions, to get the better of his discretion: for, being an high-churchman, and of consequence a malcontent, his resentment was habituated into an insurmountable prejudice against the present disposition of affairs, which, by confounding the nation with the ministry, sometimes led him into erroneous, not to say absurd calculations; otherwise, a man of good morals, well versed in mathematicks and school-divinity, studies which had not at all contributed to sweeten and unbend the natural sourness and severity of his complexion.

This gentleman being destined to the charge of superintending Perry's education, every thing was prepared for their departure; and Tom Pipes, in consequence of his own petition, put into livery, and appointed footman to the young squire. But, before they set out, the commodore paid the compliment of communicating his design to Mr. Pickle, who approved of the plan, though he durst not venture to see the boy; so much was he intimidated by the remonstrances of his wife, whose aversion to her first-born became every day more inveterate and unaccountable. This unnatural caprice seemed to be supported by a consideration which,

one would imagine, might have rather vanquiſhed her diſguſt. Her ſecond ſon Gam, who was now in the fourth year of his age, had been rickety from the cradle, and as remarkably unpromiſing in appearance as Perry was agreeable in his perſon. As the deformity increaſed, the mother's fondneſs was augmented, and the virulence of her hate againſt the other ſon ſeemed to prevail in the ſame proportion.

Far from allowing Perry to enjoy the common privileges of a child, ſhe would not ſuffer him to approach his father's houſe, expreſſed uneaſineſs whenever his name happened to be mentioned, ſickened at his praiſe, and in all reſpects behaved like a moſt rancorous ſtep-mother. Though ſhe no longer retained that ridiculous notion of his being an impoſtor, ſhe ſtill continued to abhor him, as if ſhe really believed him to be ſuch; and when any perſon deſired to know the cauſe of her ſurprizing diſlike, ſhe always loſt her temper, and peeviſhly replied, that ſhe had reaſons of her own; which ſhe was not obliged to declare: nay, ſo much was ſhe infected by this vicious partiality, that ſhe broke off all commerce with her ſiſter-in-law and the commodore, becauſe they favoured the poor child with their countenance and protection.

Her malice, however, was fruſtrated by the love and generoſity of Trunnion, who having adopted him as his own ſon, equipped him accordingly, and carried him and his governor in his own coach to the place of deſtination, where they were ſettled on a very good footing, and every thing regulated according to their deſires.

Mrs. Trunnion behaved with great decency at the departure of her nephew, to whom, with a great many pious advices, and injunctions to behave with ſubmiſſion and reverence towards his tutor, ſhe preſented a diamond ring of ſmall value, and a gold medal, as tokens of her affection and eſteem. As for the lieutenant, he accompanied them in the coach; and ſuch was the friendſhip he had contracted for Perry, that when the commodore propoſed to return, after having accom-

pliſhed

plished the intent of his journey, Jack absolutely refused to attend him, and signified his resolution to stay where he was.

Trunnion was the more startled at this declaration, as Hatchway was become so necessary to him in almost all the purposes of his life, that he foresaw he should not be able to exist without his company. Not a little affected with this consideration, he turned his eye ruefully upon the lieutenant, saying, in a piteous tone—'What! leave me at last, Jack, after we have weathered so many hard gales together? D—n my limbs! I thought you had been more of an honest heart: I looked upon you as my foremast, and Tom Pipes as my mizen; now he is carried away, if so be as you go too, my standing rigging being decayed, d'ye see, the first squall will bring me by the board. D—n ye! if in case I have given offence, can't ye speak above-board, and I shall make you amends?'

Jack being ashamed to own the true situation of his thoughts, after some hesitation, answered, with perplexity and incoherence—'No, damme! that an't the case neither: to be sure you always used me in an officer-like manner, that I must own, to give the devil his due, as the saying is: but for all that, this here is the case; I have some thoughts of going to school myself to learn your Latin lingo; for, as the saying is, *Better late mend than never*. And I am informed as how one can get more for the money here than any where else.'

In vain did Trunnion endeavour to convince him of the folly of going to school at his years, by representing that the boys would make game of him, and that he would become a laughing-stock to all the world; he persisted in his resolution to stay, and the commodore was fain to have recourse to the mediation of Pipes and Perry, who employed their influence with Jack, and at last prevailed upon him to return to the garrison, after Trunnion had promised he should be at liberty to visit them once a month. This stipulation being settled, he

and

and his friend took leave of the pupil, governor and attendant, and next morning ſet out for their habitation, which they reached in ſafety that ſame night.

Such was Hatchway's reluctance to leave Peregrine, that he is ſaid, for the firſt time in his life, to have looked miſty at parting: certain I am, that on the road homewards, after a long pauſe of ſilence, which the commodore never dreamed of interrupting, he exclaimed all of a ſudden—'I'll be damned if the dog ha'nt given me ſome ſtuff to make me love him. Indeed, there was ſomething congenial in the diſpoſitions of theſe two friends, which never failed to manifeſt itſelf in the ſequel, howſoever different their education, circumſtances, and connections, happened to be.

CHAP. XVI.

Peregrine diſtinguiſhes himſelf among his School-fellows; expoſes his Tutor, and attracts the particular Notice of the Maſter.

THUS left to the proſecution of his ſtudies, Peregrine was in a little time a diſtinguiſhed character, not only for his acuteneſs of apprehenſion, but alſo for that miſchievous fertility of fancy, of which we have already given ſuch pregnant examples. But as there was a great number of ſuch luminaries in this new ſphere to which he belonged, his talents were not ſo conſpicuous, while they ſhone in his ſingle capacity, as they afterwards appeared, when they concentrated and reflected the rays of the whole conſtellation.

At firſt he confined himſelf to piddling game, exerciſing his genius upon his own tutor, who attracted his attention, by endeavouring to ſeaſon his mind with certain political maxims, the fallacy of which he had diſcernment enough to perceive. Scarce a day paſſed in which he did not find means to render Mr. Jolter the object of ridicule; his violent prejudices, ludicrous vanity, aukward ſolemnity, and ignorance of mankind, afforded continual food for the raillery, petulance, and ſatire of his pupil, who never neglected an

opportunity of laughing, and making others laugh at his expence.

Sometimes in their parties, by mixing brandy in his wine, he decoyed this pedagogue into a debauch, during which his caution forſook him, and he expoſed himſelf to the cenſure of the company. Sometimes, when the converſation turned upon intricate ſubjects, he practiſed upon him the Socratick method of confutation; and, under pretence of being informed, by an artful train of puzzling queſtions, inſenſibly betrayed him into ſelf-contradiction.

All the remains of authority which he had hitherto preſerved over Peregrine ſoon vaniſhed; ſo that, for the future, no ſort of ceremony ſubſiſted between them, and all Mr. Jolter's precepts were conveyed in hints of friendly advice, which the other might either follow or neglect at his own pleaſure. No wonder, then, that Peregrine gave a looſe to his inclinations, and by dint of genius, and an enterprizing temper, made a figure among the younger claſs of heroes in the ſchool.

Before he had been a full year at Wincheſter, he had ſignalized himſelf in ſo many atchievements, in defiance to the laws and regulations of the place, that he was looked upon with admiration, and actually choſen *dux*, or leader, by a large body of his cotemporaries. It was not long before his fame reached the ears of the maſter, who ſent for Mr. Jolter, communicated to him the informations he had received, and deſired him to check the vivacity of his charge, and redouble his vigilance in time to come, elſe he ſhould be obliged to make a publick example of his pupil for the benefit of the ſchool.

The governor, conſcious of his own unimportance, was not a little diſconcerted at this injunction, which it was not in his power to fulfil by any compulſive means. He therefore went home in a very penſive mood, and after mature deliberation, reſolved to expoſtulate with Peregrine in the moſt familiar terms, and endeavour to diſſuade him from practices which might affect his

his character as well as intereſt. He accordingly frankly told him the ſubject of the maſter's diſcourſe, repreſenting the diſgrace he might incur by neglecting this warning; and putting him in mind of his own ſituation, hinted the conſequences of the commodore's diſpleaſure, in caſe he ſhould be brought to diſapprove of his conduct. Theſe inſinuations made the greater impreſſion, as they were delivered with many expreſſions of friendſhip and concern. The young gentleman was not ſo raw, but that he could perceive the ſolidity of Mr. Jolter's advice, to which he promiſed to conform, becauſe his pride was intereſted in the affair: and he conſidered his own reformation as the only means of avoiding that infamy, which even in idea he could not bear.

His governor, finding him ſo reaſonable, profited by theſe moments of reflection; and, in order to prevent a relapſe, propoſed that he ſhould engage in ſome delightful ſtudy that would agreeably amuſe his imagination, and gradually detach him from thoſe connections which had involved him in ſo many troubleſome adventures. For this purpoſe he, with many rapturous encomiums, recommended the mathematicks, as yielding more rational and ſenſible pleaſures to a youthful fancy than any other ſubject of contemplation; and actually began to read Euclid with him the ſame afternoon.

Peregrine entered upon this branch of learning with all that warmth of application which boys commonly yield on the firſt change of ſtudy; but he had ſcarcely advanced beyond the *Pons Aſinorum*, when his ardour abated; the teſt of truth by demonſtration, did not elevate him to thoſe tranſports of joy with which his preceptor had regaled his expectation; and before he arrived at the fortieth and ſeventh propoſition, he began to yawn drearily, make abundance of wry faces, and thought himſelf but indifferently paid for his attention, when he ſhared the vaſt diſcovery of Pythagoras, and underſtood that the ſquare of the hypothenuſe was

equal to the ſquares of the other two ſides of a right-angled triangle. He was aſhamed, however, to fail in his undertaking, and perſevered with great induſtry, until he had finiſhed the firſt four books, acquired plain trigonometry, with the method of algebraical calculation, and made himſelf well acquainted with the principles of ſurveying. But no conſideration could prevail upon him to extend his enquiries farther in this ſcience; and he returned with double reliſh to his former avocations; like a ſtream, which being dammed, accumulates more force, and burſting over its mounds, ruſhes down with double impetuoſity.

Mr. Jolter ſaw with aſtoniſhment and chagrin, but could not reſiſt the torrent. His behaviour was now no other than a ſeries of licence and effrontery; prank ſucceeded prank, and outrage followed outrage, with ſurprizing velocity. Complaints were every day preferred againſt him; in vain were admonitions beſtowed by the governor in private, and menaces diſcharged by the maſters in publick; he diſregarded the firſt, deſpiſed the latter, diveſted himſelf of all manner of reſtraint, and proceeded in his career to ſuch a pitch of audacity, that a conſultation was held upon the ſubject, in which it was determined, that this untoward ſpirit ſhould be humbled by a ſevere and ignominious flogging for the very next offence he ſhould commit. In the mean time, Mr. Jolter was deſired to write in the maſter's name to the commodore, requeſting him to remove Tom Pipes from the perſon of his nephew, the ſaid Pipes being a principal actor and abettor in all his malverſations; and to put a ſtop to the monthly viſitations of the mutilated lieutenant, who had never once failed to uſe his permiſſion, but came punctual to a day, always fraught with ſome new invention. Indeed, by this time, Mr. Hatchway was as well known, and much better beloved, by every boy in the ſchool, than the maſter who inſtructed him, and always received by a number of ſcholars, who uſed to attend Peregrine when he went forth to meet his friend, and

conduct

conduct him to his lodging with publick testimonies of joy and applause.

As for Tom Pipes, he was not so properly the attendant of Peregrine, as master of the revels to the whole school. He mingled in all their parties, and superintended the diversions, deciding between boy and boy, as if he acted by commission under the great seal. He regulated their motions by his whistle; instructed the young boys in the games of hustle-cap, leap-frog, and chuck-farthing; imparted to those of a more advanced age the sciences of cribbage and all-fours, together with the method of storming the castle, acting the comedy of Prince Arthur, and other pantomimes, as they are commonly exhibited at sea; and instructed the seniors, who were distinguished by the appellation of bloods, in cudgel-playing, dancing the St. Giles's hornpipe, drinking flip, and smoaking tobacco. These qualifications had rendered him so necessary and acceptable to the scholars, that exclusive of Perry's concern in the affair, his dismission, in all probability, would have produced some dangerous convulsion in the community. Jolter, therefore, knowing his importance, informed his pupil of the directions he had received, and very candidly asked how he should demean himself in the execution; for he durst not write to the commodore without this previous notice, fearing that the young gentleman, as soon as he should get an inkling of the affair, would follow the example, and make his uncle acquainted with certain anecdotes, which it was the governor's interest to keep concealed. Peregrine was of opinion that he should spare himself the trouble of conveying any complaints to the commodore; and if questioned by the master, assure him he had complied with his desire, at the same time he promised faithfully to conduct himself with such circumspection for the future, that the master should have no temptation to revive the enquiry. But the resolution attending this extorted promise was too frail to last, and in less than a fortnight our young hero found him-

ſelf intangled in an adventure from which he was not extricated with his uſual good fortune.

CHAP. XVII.

He is concerned in a dangerous Adventure with a certain Gardener; ſublimes his Ideas, commences Gallant, and becomes acquainted with Miſs Emily Gauntlet.

HE and ſome of his companions one day entered a garden in the ſuburbs, and having indulged their appetites, deſired to know what ſatisfaction they muſt make for the fruit they had pulled. The gardener demanded what (in their opinion) was an exorbitant price; and they, with many opprobrious terms, refuſed to pay it. The peaſant, being ſurly and untractable, inſiſted upon his right; neither was he deficient or ſparing in the eloquence of vulgar abuſe. His gueſts attempted to retreat; a ſcuffle enſued, in which Peregrine loſt his cap, and the gardener being in danger from the number of his foes, called to his wife to let looſe the dog, who inſtantly flew to his maſter's aſſiſtance; and after having tore the leg of one, and the ſhoulder of another, put the whole body of ſcholars to flight. Enraged at the indignity which had been offered them, they ſolicited a reinforcement of their friends; and with Tom Pipes at their head, marched back to the field of battle. Their adverſary ſeeing them approach, called his apprentice, who worked at the other end of the ground, to his aſſiſtance, armed him with a mattock, while he himſelf wielded an hoe, bolted his door on the inſide, and flanked with his man and maſtiff, waited the attack without flinching. He had not remained three minutes in this poſture of defence, when Pipes, who acted as the enemy's forlorn hope, advanced to the gate with great intrepidity, and clapping his foot to the door, which was none of the ſtouteſt, with the execution and diſpatch of a petard, ſplit it into a thouſand pieces. This ſudden execution had an immediate effect upon the prentice, who retreated with great precipitation, and eſcaped at a poſtern,

tern. But the master placed himself, like another Hercules, in the breach; and when Pipes, brandishing his cudgel, stepped forward to engage him, levelled his weapon with such force and dexterity at his head, that had the skull been made of penetrable stuff, the iron edge must have cleft his pate in twain. Casemated as he was, the instrument cut sheer even to the bone, on which it struck with such amazing violence, that sparks of real fire were produced by the collision. And let not the incredulous reader pretend to doubt the truth of this phenomenon, until he shall have first perused the ingenious Peter Kolben's Natural History of the Cape of Good Hope, where the inhabitants commonly use to strike fire with the shin-bones of lions which have been killed in that part of Africk.

Pipes, though a little disconcerted, far from being disabled by the blow, in a trice retorted the compliment with his truncheon, which, had not his antagonist expeditiously slipped his head aside, would have laid him breathless across his own threshold; but, happily for him, he received the salutation upon his right shoulder, which crashed beneath the stroke, and the hoe dropped instantly from his tingling hand. Tom perceiving, and being unwilling to forego the advantage he had gained, darted his head into the bosom of this son of earth, and overturned him on the plain, being himself that instant assaulted by the mastiff, who fastened upon the outside of his thigh. Feeling himself incommoded by this assailant in his rear, he quitted the prostrate gardener, to the resentment of his associates, who poured upon him in shoals, and turning about, laid hold with both his hands of this ferocious animal's throat, which he squeezed with such incredible force and perseverance, that the creature quitted his hold; his tongue lolled out of his jaws, the blood started from his eyes, and he swung a lifeless trunk between the hands of his vanquisher.

It was well for his master that he did not longer exist; for by this time he was overwhelmed by such a multitude

multitude of foes, that his whole body ſcarce afforded points of contact to all the fiſts that drummed upon it; conſequently, to uſe a vulgar phraſe, his wind was almoſt knocked out, before Pipes had leiſure to interpoſe in his behalf, and perſuade his offenders to deſiſt, by repreſenting that the wife had gone to alarm the neighbourhood, and that in all probability they would be intercepted in their return. They accordingly liſtened to his remonſtrances, and marched homewards in triumph, leaving the gardener in the embraces of his mother earth, from which he had not power to move when he was found by his diſconſolate help-mate and ſome friends whom ſhe had aſſembled for his aſſiſtance. Among theſe was a blackſmith and farrier, who took cognizance of his carcaſe, every limb of which having examined, he declared there was no bone broke, and taking out his fleam, blooded him plentifully as he lay. He was then conveyed to his bed, from which he was not able to ſtir during a whole month. His family coming upon the pariſh, a formal complaint was made to the maſter of the ſchool, and Peregrine repreſented as the ring-leader of thoſe who committed this barbarous aſſault. An enquiry was immediately ſet on foot, and the articles of impeachment being fully proved, our hero was ſentenced to be ſeverely chaſtiſed in the face of the whole ſchool. This was a diſgrace, the thoughts of which his proud heart could not brook. He reſolved to make his elopement rather than undergo the puniſhment to which he was doomed; and having ſignified his ſentiments to his confederates, they promiſed, one and all, to ſtand by him, and either ſcreen him from chaſtiſement, or ſhare his fate.

Confiding in this friendly proteſtation, he appeared unconcerned on the day that was appointed for his puniſhment; and when he was called to his deſtiny, advanced towards the ſcene, attended by the greateſt part of the ſcholars, who intimated their determination to the maſter, and propoſed that Peregrine ſhould be forgiven. The ſuperior behaved with that dignity of de-

meanor

meanor which became his place, repreſented the folly and preſumption of their demand, reprehended them for their audacious proceeding, and ordered everybody to his reſpective ſtation. They obeyed his command, and our unfortunate hero was publickly horſed, *in terrorem* of all whom it might concern.

This diſgrace had a very ſenſible effect upon the mind of Peregrine, who having by this time paſſed the fourteenth year of his age, began to adopt the pride and ſentiments of a man. Thus diſhonourably ſtigmatized, he was aſhamed to appear in publick as uſual; he was incenſed againſt his companions for their infidelity and irreſolution, and plunged into a profound reverie that laſted ſeveral weeks, during which he ſhook off his boyiſh connections, and fixed his view upon objects which he thought more worthy of his attention.

In the courſe of his gymnaſtick exerciſes, at which he was very expert, he contracted intimacies with ſeveral youths who were greatly his ſuperiors in point of age, and who, pleaſed with his aſpiring genius and addreſs, introduced him into parties of gallantry which ſtrongly captivated his inclination. He was by nature particularly adapted for ſucceeding in adventures of this kind; over and above a moſt engaging perſon, that improved with his years, he poſſeſſed a dignified aſſurance, an agreeable ferocity, which inhanced the conqueſt of the fair who had the good fortune to enſlave him, unlimited generoſity, and a fund of humour which never failed to pleaſe. Nor was he deficient in the more ſolid accompliſhments of youth; he had profited in his ſtudies beyond expectation, and beſides that ſenſibility of diſcernment which is the foundation of taſte, and in conſequence of which he diſtinguiſhed and enjoyed the beauties of the claſſicks, he had already given ſeveral ſpecimens of a very promiſing poetick talent.

With this complexion and theſe qualifications, no wonder that our hero attracted the notice and affections of

of the young Delias in town, whose hearts had just began to flutter for they knew not what. Inquiries were made concerning his condition; and no sooner were his expectations known, than he was invited and caressed by all the parents, while their daughters vied with each other in treating him with particular complacency. He inspired love and emulation wherever he appeared; envy and jealous rage followed of course; so that he became a very desireable, though a very dangerous acquaintance. His moderation was not equal to his success; his vanity took the lead of his passions, dissipating his attention, which might otherwise have fixed him to one object; and he was possessed with the rage of increasing the number of his conquests. With this view he frequented publick-walks, concerts, and assemblies, became remarkably rich and fashionable in his cloaths, gave entertainments to the ladies, and was in the utmost hazard of turning out a most egregious coxcomb.

While his character thus wavered between the ridicule of some, and the regard of others, an accident happened, which, by contracting his view to one object, detached him from those vain pursuits that would in time have plunged him into an abyss of folly and contempt. Being one evening at the ball which is always given to the ladies at the time of the races, the person who acted as master of the ceremonies, knowing how fond Mr. Pickle was of every opportunity to display himself, came up and told him, that there was a fine young creature at the other end of the room, who seemed to have a great inclination to dance a minuet, but wanted a partner, the gentleman who attended her being in boots.

Peregrine's vanity being arouzed at this intimation, he went up to reconnoitre the young lady, and was struck with admiration at her beauty. She seemed to be of his own age, was tall, and, though slender, exquisitely shaped; her hair was auburn, and in such plenty, that the barbarity of dress had not been able

to

to prevent it from ſhading both ſides of her forehead, which was high and poliſhed; the contour of her face was oval, her noſe very little raiſed into the aquiline form, that contributed to the ſpirit and dignity of her aſpect; her mouth was ſmall, her lips plump, juicy, and delicious, her teeth regular and white as driven ſnow, her complexion incredibly delicate, and glowing with health, and her full blue eyes beamed forth vivacity and love: her mien was at the ſame time commanding and engaging, her addreſs perfectly genteel, and her whole appearance ſo captivating, that our young Adonis looked, and was overcome.

He no ſooner recollected himſelf from his aſtoniſhment, than he advanced to her with a graceful air of reſpect, and begged ſhe would do him the honour to walk a minuet with him. She ſeemed particularly pleaſed with his application, and very frankly complied with his requeſt. This pair was too remarkable to eſcape the particular notice of the company; Mr. Pickle was well known by almoſt every body in the room, but his partner was altogether a new face, and of conſequence underwent the criticiſm of all the ladies in the aſſembly: one whiſpered, 'She has a good complexion, but don't you think ſhe is a little awry?' A ſecond pitied her for her maſculine noſe; a third obſerved, that ſhe was aukward for want of ſeeing company; a fourth diſtinguiſhed ſomething very bold in her countenance; and, in ſhort, there was not a beauty in her whole compoſition, which the glaſs of envy did not pervert into a blemiſh.

The men, however, looked upon her with different eyes; among them her appearance produced an univerſal murmur of applauſe; they encircled the ſpace on which ſhe danced, and were enchanted by her graceful motion. While they launched out in the praiſes of her, they expreſſed their diſpleaſure at the good fortune of her partner, whom they damned for a little finical coxcomb, that was too much engroſſed by the contemplation of his own perſon, to diſcern or deſerve

the

the favour of his fate. He did not hear, therefore could not repine at these invectives; but while they imagined he indulged his vanity, a much more generous passion had taken possession of his heart.

Instead of that petulance of gaiety for which he had been distinguished in his publick appearance, he now gave manifest signs of confusion and concern; he danced with an anxiety which impeded his performance, and blushed to the eyes at every false step he made. Though this extraordinary agitation was over-looked by the men, it could not escape the observation of the ladies, who perceived it with equal surprize and resentment; and when Peregrine led his fair unknown to her seat, expressed their pique in an affected titter, which broke from every mouth at the same instant, as if all of them had been informed by the same spirit.

Peregrine was nettled at this unmannerly mark of disapprobation; and, in order to increase their chagrin, endeavoured to enter into particular conversation with their fair rival. The young lady herself, who neither wanted penetration, nor the consciousness of her own accomplishments, resented their behaviour, though she triumphed at the cause of it, and gave her partner all the encouragement he could desire. Her mother, who was present, thanked him for his civility in taking such notice of a stranger, and he received a compliment of the same nature from the young gentleman in boots, who was her own brother.

If he was charmed with her appearance, he was quite ravished with her discourse, which was sensible, spirited, and gay. Her frank and sprightly demeanour excited his own confidence and good-humour; and he described to her the characters of those females who had honoured them with such a spiteful mark of distinction, in terms so replete with humorous satire, that she seemed to listen with particular complacency of attention, and distinguished every nymph thus ridiculed with such a significant glance, as overwhelmed her with chagrin and mortification. In short, they seemed to relish each

other's

other's converſation, during which our young Damon acquitted himſelf with great ſkill in all the duties of gallantry; he laid hold of proper opportunities to expreſs his admiration of her charms, had recourſe to the ſilent rhetorick of tender looks, breathed divers inſidious ſighs, and attached himſelf wholly to her during the remaining part of the entertainment.

When the company broke up, he attended her to her lodgings, and took leave of her with a ſqueeze of the hand, after having obtained permiſſion to viſit her next morning, and been informed by the mother that her name was Miſs Emilia Gauntlet.

All night long he cloſed not an eye, but amuſed himſelf with plans of pleaſure, which his imagination ſuggeſted, in conſequence of this new acquaintance. He aroſe with the lark, adjuſted his hair into an agreeable negligence of curl, and dreſſing himſelf in a genteel grey frock trimmed with ſilver binding, waited with the utmoſt impatience for the hour of ten, which no ſooner ſtruck than he hied him to the place of appointment, and enquiring for Miſs Gauntlet, was ſhewn into a parlour. Here he had not waited above ten minutes, when Emilia entered in a moſt enchanting undreſs, with all the graces of nature playing about her perſon, and in a moment rivetted the chains of his ſlavery beyond the power of accident to unbind.

Her mother being ſtill a-bed, and her brother gone to give orders about the chaiſe, in which they propoſed to return the ſame day to their own habitation, he enjoyed her company *tête-à-tête* a whole hour, during which he declared his love in the moſt paſſionate terms, and begged that he might be admitted into the number of thoſe admirers whom ſhe permitted to viſit and adore her.

She affected to look upon his vows and proteſtations as the ordinary effects of gallantry, and very obligingly aſſured him, that were ſhe to live in that place, ſhe ſhould be glad to ſee him often; but as the ſpot on which ſhe reſided was at a conſiderable diſtance, ſhe

 could

could not expect he would go so far upon such a trifling occasion, to take the trouble of providing himself with her mamma's permission.

To this favourable hint he answered with all the eagerness of the most fervid passion, that he uttered nothing but the genuine dictates of his heart; that he desired nothing so much as an opportunity of evincing the sincerity of his professions; and that though he lived at the extremity of the kingdom, he would find means to lay himself at her feet, provided he could visit her with her mother's consent, which he assured her he would not fail to solicit.

She then gave him to understand, that her habitation was about sixteen miles from Winchester; in a village which she named, and where (as he could easily collect from her discourse) he would be no unwelcome guest.

In the midst of this communication they were joined by Mrs. Gauntlet, who received him with great courtesy, thanking him again for his politeness to Emy at the ball, and anticipated his intention, by saying that she should be very glad to see him at her house, if ever his occasions should call him that way.

CHAP. XVIII.

He inquires into the Situation of this young Lady, with whom he is enamoured; elopes from School; is found by the Lieutenant, conveyed to Winchester, and sends a Letter with a Copy of Verses to his Mistress.

HE was transported with pleasure at this invitation, which he assured her he should not neglect; and after a little more conversation on general topicks, took his leave of the charming Emilia, and her prudent mamma, who had perceived the first emotion of Mr. Pickle's passion for her daughter, and been at some pains to inquire about his family and fortune.

Neither was Peregrine less inquisitive about the situation and pedigree of his new mistress; who, he learned, was the only daughter of a field-officer, who died before he had it in his power to make suitable provi-

ſion for his children; that the widow lived in a frugal, though decent manner, on her penſion, aſſiſted by the bounty of her relations; that the ſon carried arms as volunteer in the company which his father had commanded; and that Emilia had been educated in London, at the expence of a rich uncle, who was ſeized with the whim of marrying at the age of fifty-five; in conſequence of which, his niece had returned to her mother, without any viſible dependance, except on her own conduct and qualifications.

This account, though it could not diminiſh his affection, nevertheleſs alarmed his pride; for his warm imagination had exaggerated all his own proſpects; and he began to fear, that his paſſion for Emilia might be thought to derogate from the dignity of his ſituation. The ſtruggle between his intereſt and love produced a perplexity which had an evident effect upon his behaviour; he became penſive, ſolitary, and peeviſh, avoided all publick diverſions, and grew ſo remarkably negligent in his dreſs, that he was ſcarce diſtinguiſhable by his own acquaintance. This contention of thoughts continued ſeveral weeks, at the end of which the charms of Emilia triumphed over every other conſideration. Having received a ſupply of money from the commodore, who acted towards him with great generoſity, he ordered Pipes to put up ſome linen, and other neceſſaries, in a ſort of knapſack which he could conveniently carry, and thus attended, ſet out early one morning on foot for the village where his charmer lived, at which he arrived before two o'clock in the afternoon; having choſen this method of travelling, that his route might not be ſo eaſily diſcovered, as it muſt have been had he hired horſes, or taken a place in the ſtage-coach.

The firſt thing he did was to ſecure a convenient lodging at the inn where he dined; then he ſhifted himſelf, and according to the direction he had received, went to the houſe of Mrs. Gauntlet in a tranſport of joyous expectation. As he approached the gate, his agitation increaſed; he knocked with impatience and

concern, the door opened, and he had actually asked if Mrs. Gauntlet was at home, before he perceived that the portress was no other than his dear Emilia. She was not without emotion at the unexpected sight of her lover, who instantly recognizing his charmer, obeyed the irresistible impulse of his love, and caught the fair creature in his arms. Nor did she seem offended at this forwardness of behaviour, which might have displeased another of a less open disposition, or less used to the freedom of a sensible education; but her natural frankness had been encouraged and improved by the easy and familiar intercourse in which she had been bred; and therefore, instead of reprimanding him with a severity of look, she with great good-humour rallied him upon his assurance, which she observed, was undoubtedly the effect of his own conscious merit, and conducted him into a parlour, where he found her mother, who in very polite terms expressed her satisfaction at seeing him within her house.

After tea, Miss Emy proposed an evening walk, which they enjoyed through a variety of little copses and lawns, watered by a most romantick stream, that quite enchanted the imagination of Peregrine.

It was late before they returned from this agreeable excursion, and when our lover wished the ladies a good night, Mrs. Gauntlet insisted upon his staying to supper, and treated him with particular demonstrations of regard and affection. As her œconomy was not encumbered with an unnecessary number of domesticks, her own presence was often required in different parts of the house, so that the young gentleman was supplied with frequent opportunities of promoting his suit, by all the tender oaths and insinuations that his passion could suggest. He protested her idea had taken such entire possession of his heart, that finding himself unable to support her absence one day longer, he had quitted his studies, and left his governor by stealth, that he might visit the object of his adoration, and be blessed in her company for a few days without interruption.

She

She liſtened to his addreſſes with ſuch affability as denoted approbation and delight, and gently chid him as a thoughtleſs truant, but carefully avoided the confeſſion of a mutual flame; becauſe ſhe diſcerned in the midſt of all his tenderneſs, a levity of pride which ſhe durſt not venture to truſt with ſuch a declaration. Perhaps ſhe was confirmed in this caution by her mother, who very wiſely, in her civilities to him, maintained a ſort of ceremonious diſtance, which ſhe thought not only requiſite for the honour and intereſt of her family, but likewiſe for her own exculpation, ſhould ſhe ever be taxed with having encouraged or abetted him in the imprudent ſallies of his youth: yet, notwithſtanding this affected reſerve, he was treated with ſuch diſtinction by both, that he was raviſhed with his ſituation, and became more and more enamoured every day.

While he remained under the influence of this ſweet intoxication, his abſence produced great diſturbance at Wincheſter. Mr. Jolter was grievouſly afflicted at his abrupt departure, which alarmed him the more, as it happened after a long fit of melancholy which he had perceived in his pupil. He communicated his apprehenſions to the maſter of the ſchool, who adviſed him to apprize the commodore of his nephew's diſappearance, and in the mean time, inquire at all the inns in town, whether he had hired horſes, or any ſort of carriage, for his conveyance, or was met with on the road by any perſon who could give an account of the direction in which he travelled.

This ſcrutiny, though performed with great diligence and minuteneſs, was altogether ineffectual; they could obtain no intelligence of the runaway. Mr. Trunnion was well nigh diſtracted at the news of his flight; he raved with great fury at the imprudence of Peregrine, whom in his firſt tranſports he damned as an ungrateful deſerter; then he curſed Hatchway and Pipes, who he ſwore had foundered the lad by their pernicious counſels; and, laſtly, transferred his execrations upon Jolter, becauſe he had not kept a better

look-out: finally, he made an apoſtrophe to that ſon of a bitch the gout, which for the preſent diſabled him from ſearching for his nephew in perſon. That he might not, however, neglect any means in his power, he immediately diſpatched expreſſes to all the ſea-port towns on the coaſt, that he might be prevented from leaving the kingdom; and the lieutenant, at his own deſire, was ſent acroſs the country in queſt of this young fugitive.

Four days had he unſucceſsfully carried on his inquiries with great accuracy; when, reſolving to return by Wincheſter, where he hoped to meet with ſome hints of intelligence, by which he might profit in his future ſearch, he ſtruck off the common road to take the benefit of a nearer cut; and finding himſelf benighted near a village, took up his lodgings at the firſt inn to which his horſe directed him. Having beſpoke ſomething for ſupper, and retired to his chamber, where he amuſed himſelf with a pipe, he heard a confuſed noiſe of ruſtick jollity, which being all of a ſudden interrupted, after a ſhort pauſe his ear was ſaluted with the voice of Pipes, who, at the ſolicitation of the company, began to entertain them with a ſong.

Hatchway inſtantly recognized the well-known ſound, in which indeed he could not poſſibly be miſtaken, as nothing in nature bore the leaſt reſemblance to it; he threw his pipe into the chimney, and ſnatching up one of his piſtols, ran immediately to the apartment from whence the voice iſſued; he no ſooner entered, than diſtinguiſhing his old ſhip-mate in a crowd of country peaſants, he in a moment ſprung upon him, and clapping his piſtol to his breaſt, exclaimed, 'D—n you, Pipes, you are a dead man, if you don't immediately produce young maſter!'

This menacing application had a much greater affect upon the company than upon Tom, who looking at the lieutenant, with great tranquillity, replied, 'Why ſo I can, Maſter Hatchway.'—'What! ſafe and ſound?' cried the other. 'As a roach!' anſwered Pipes,

Pipes, ſo much to the ſatisfaction of his friend Jack, that he ſhook him by the hand, and deſired him to proceed with his ſong. This being performed, and the reckoning diſcharged, the two friends adjourned to the other room, where the lieutenant was informed of the manner in which the young gentleman had made his elopement from college, as well as of the other particulars of his preſent ſituation, as far as they had fallen within the ſphere of his comprehenſion.

While they ſat thus conferring together, Peregrine having taken leave of his miſtreſs for the night, came home, and was not a little ſurprized, when Hatchway entering his chamber in his ſea attitude, thruſt out his hand by way of ſalutation. His old pupil received him as uſual, with great cordiality, and expreſſed his aſtoniſhment at meeting him in that place; but when he underſtood the cauſe and intention of his arrival, he ſtarted with concern; and his viſage glowing with indignation, told him he was old enough to be judge of his own conduct, and when he ſhould ſee it convenient, would return of himſelf; but thoſe who thought he was to be compelled to his duty, would find themſelves egregiouſly miſtaken.

The lieutenant aſſured him, that for his own part he had no intention to offer him the leaſt violence; but, at the ſame time, he repreſented to him the danger of incenſing the commodore, who was already almoſt diſtracted on account of his abſence; and, in ſhort, conveyed his arguments, which were equally obvious and valid, in ſuch expreſſions of friendſhip and reſpect, that Peregrine yielded to his remonſtrances, and promiſed to accompany him next day to Wincheſter.

Hatchway, overjoyed at the ſucceſs of his negociation, went immediately to the hoſtler, and beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe for Mr. Pickle and his man, with whom he afterwards indulged himſelf in a double cann of rumbo; and when the night was pretty far advanced, left the lover to his repoſe, or rather to the thorns of his own meditation; for he ſlept not one moment, being inceſ-

fantly tortured with the profpect of parting from his divine Emilia, who had now acquired the moft abfolute empire over his foul. One minute he propofed to depart early in the morning, without feeing this enchantrefs, in whofe bewitching prefence he durft not truft his own refolution. Then the thoughts of leaving her in fuch an abrupt and difrefpectful manner, interpofed in favour of his love and honour. This war of fentiments kept him all night upon the rack, and it was time to rife before he had determined to vifit his charmer, and candidly impart the motives that induced him to leave her.

He accordingly repaired to her mother's houfe with a heavy heart, being attended to the gate by Hatchway, who did not chufe to leave him alone; and being admitted, found Emilia juft rifen, and, in his opinion, more beautiful than ever.

Alarmed at his early vifit, and the gloom that overfpread his countenance, fhe ftood in filent expectation of hearing fome melancholy tidings; and it was not till after a confiderable paufe, that he collected refolution enough to tell her he was come to take his leave. Though fhe ftrove to conceal her forrow, nature was not to be fuppreffed; every feature of her countenance faddened in a moment, and it was not without the utmoft difficulty that fhe kept her lovely eyes from flowing. He faw the fituation of her thoughts, and in order to alleviate her concern, affured her he fhould find means to fee her again in a very few weeks; meanwhile he communicated his reafons for departing, in which fhe readily acquiefced; and having mutually confoled each other, their tranfports of grief fubfided, and before Mrs. Gauntlet came down ftairs, they were in a condition to behave with great decency and refignation.

This good lady expreffed her concern when fhe learned his refolution, faying, fhe hoped his occafions and inclinations would permit him to favour them with his agreeable company another time.

The

The lieutenant, who began to be uneaſy at Peregrine's ſtay, knocked at the door, and being introduced by his friend, had the honour of breakfaſting with the ladies; on which occaſion his heart received ſuch a ſhock from the charms of Emilia, that he afterwards made a merit with his friend of having conſtrained himſelf ſo far, as to forbear commencing his profeſſed rival.

At length they bade adieu to their kind entertainers, and in leſs than an hour ſetting out from the inn, arrived about two o'clock in Wincheſter, where Mr. Jolter was overwhelmed with joy at their appearance.

The nature of this adventure being unknown to all except thoſe who could be depended upon, every body who inquired about the cauſe of Peregrine's abſence, was told that he had been with a relation in the country, and the maſter condeſcended to overlook his indiſcretion; ſo that Hatchway ſeeing every thing ſettled to the ſatisfaction of his friend, returned to the garriſon, and gave the commodore an account of his expedition.

The old gentleman was very much ſtartled when he heard there was a lady in the caſe, and very emphatically obſerved, that a man had better be ſucked into the Gulph of Florida, than once get into the indraught of a woman; becauſe, in one caſe, he may with good pilotage bring out his veſſel ſafe between the Bahamas and the Indian ſhore; but in the other there is no outlet at all, and it is in vain to ſtrive againſt the current; ſo that of courſe he muſt be embayed, and run chuck upon a lee-ſhore. He reſolved, therefore, to lay the ſtate of the caſe before Mr. Gamaliel Pickle, and concert ſuch meaſures with him as ſhould be thought likelieſt to detach his ſon from the purſuit of an idle amour, which could not fail of interfering in a dangerous manner with the plan of his education.

In the mean time, Perry's ideas were totally engroſſed by his amiable miſtreſs; who, whether he ſlept or waked,

waked, was ſtill preſent in his imagination, which produced the following ſtanzas in her praiſe.

Adieu, ye ſtreams that ſmoothly flow,
Ye vernal airs that ſoftly blow,
Ye plains by blooming ſpring array'd,
Ye birds that warble thro' the ſhade.

Unhurt, from you my ſoul could fly,
Nor drop one tear, nor heave one ſigh;
But forc'd from Celia's charms to part,
All joy deſerts my drooping heart.

O! fairer than the roſy morn,
When flowers the dewy fields adorn;
Unſullied as the genial ray,
That warms the balmy breeze of May.

Thy charms divinely bright appear,
And add new ſplendor to the year;
Improve the day with freſh delight,
And gild with joy the dreary night!

This juvenile production was incloſed in a very tender billet to Emilia, and committed to the charge of Pipes, who was ordered to ſet out for Mrs. Gauntlet's habitation with a preſent of veniſon, and a compliment to the ladies; and directed to take ſome opportunity of delivering the letter to Miſs, without the knowledge of her mamma.

CHAP. XIX.

His Meſſenger meets with a Misfortune, to which he applies a very extraordinary Expedient that is attended with ſtrange Conſequences.

AS a ſtage-coach paſſed within two miles of the village where ſhe lived, Tom bargained with the driver for a ſeat on the box, and accordingly departed on this meſſage, though he was but indifferently qualified for commiſſions of ſuch a nature: having received particular injunctions about the letter, he reſolved to make that the chief object of his care, and very ſagaciouſly conveyed it between his ſtocking and the ſole of his foot, where he thought it would be perfectly ſecure from

from all injury and accident. Here it remained until he arrived at the inn where he had formerly lodged; when, after having refreshed himself with a draught of beer, he pulled off his stocking, and found the poor billet sullied with dust, and torn in a thousand tatters by the motion of his foot in walking the last two miles of his journey. Thunderstruck at this phenomenon, he uttered a long and loud *whew!* which was succeeded by an exclamation of 'D—n my old shoes! a bite by G—!' then he rested his elbows on the table, and his forehead upon his two fists, and in that attitude deliberated with himself upon the means of remedying this misfortune.

As he was not distracted by a vast number of ideas, he soon concluded that his best expedient would be to employ the clerk of the parish, who he knew was a great scholar, to write another epistle according to the directions he should give him; and never dreaming that the mangled original would in the least facilitate this scheme, he very wisely committed it to the flames, that it might never rise in judgment against him.

Having taken this wise step, he went in quest of the scribe, to whom he communicated his business, and promised a full pot by way of gratification. The clerk, who was also school-master, proud of an opportunity to distinguish his talents, readily undertook the task; and repairing with his employer to the inn, in less than a quarter of an hour produced a morsel of eloquence so much to the satisfaction of Pipes, that he squeezed his hand by way of acknowledgment, and doubled his allowance of beer. This being discussed, our courier betook himself to the house of Mrs. Gauntlet, with the haunch of venison and this succedaneous letter, and delivered his message to the mother, who received it with great respect, and many kind inquiries about the health and welfare of his master, attempting to tip the messenger a crown, which he absolutely refused to accept, in consequence of Mr. Pickle's repeated caution. While the old gentlewoman turned to a

servant,

ſervant, in order to give directions about the diſpoſal of the preſent, Pipes looked upon this as a favourable occaſion to tranſact his buſineſs with Emilia, and therefore ſhutting one eye, with a jirk of his thumb towards his left ſhoulder, and a moſt ſignificant twiſt of his countenance, he beckoned the young lady into another room, as if he had been fraught with ſomething of conſequence, which he wanted to impart. She underſtood the hint, howſoever ſtrangely communicated; and by ſtepping to one ſide of the room, gave him an opportunity of ſlipping the epiſtle into her hand, which he gently ſqueezed at the ſame time in token of regard: then throwing a ſide-glance at the mother, whoſe back was turned, clapped his finger on the ſide of his noſe, thereby recommending ſecreſy and diſcretion.

Emilia conveying the letter into her boſom, could not help ſmiling at Tom's politeneſs and dexterity; but leſt her mama ſhould detect him in the execution of his pantomime, ſhe broke off this intercourſe of ſigns, by aſking aloud, when he propoſed to ſet out on his return to Wincheſter. When he anſwered, 'To-morrow morning. Mrs. Gauntlet recommended him to the hoſpitality of her own footman, deſiring him to make much of Mr. Pipes below, where he was kept to ſupper, and very cordially entertained. Our young heroine, impatient to read her lover's billet, which made her heart throb with rapturous expectation, retired to her chamber as ſoon as poſſible, with a view of peruſing the contents, which were theſe.

'DIVINE EMPRESS OF MY SOUL!

'IF the refulgent flames of your beauty had 'not evaporated the particles of my tranſported brain, 'and ſcorched my intellects into a cinder of ſtolidity, 'perhaps the reſplendency of my paſſion might ſhine 'illuſtrious through the ſable curtain of my ink, and 'in ſublimity tranſcend the galaxy itſelf, though wafted on the pinions of a grey gooſe-quill! But, ah! 'celeſtial enchantreſs! the necromancy of thy tyranni-

'cal

'cal charms hath fettered my faculties with adaman-'tine chains, which unleſs thy compaſſion ſhall melt, I 'muſt eternally remain in the Tartarean gulph of diſ-'mal deſpair. Vouchſafe, therefore, O thou brighteſt 'luminary of this terreſtrial ſphere! to warm as well 'as ſhine; and let the genial rays of thy benevolence 'melt the icy emanations of thy diſdain, which hath 'frozen up the ſpirits of angelick preheminence! Thy 'moſt egregious admirer and ſuperlative ſlave,

'PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

Never was aſtoniſhment more perplexing than that of Emilia, when ſhe read this curious compoſition, which ſhe repeated verbatim three times before ſhe would credit the evidence of her own ſenſes. She began to fear in good earneſt that love had produced a diſorder in her lover's underſtanding; but after a thouſand conjectures, by which ſhe attempted to account for his extraordinary fuſtian of ſtyle, ſhe concluded that it was the effect of mere levity, calculated to ridicule the paſſion he had formerly profeſſed. Irritated by this ſuppoſition, ſhe reſolved to baulk his triumph with affected indifference, and in the mean time endeavoured to expel him from that place which he poſſeſſed within her heart. And, indeed, ſuch a victory over her inclinations might have been obtained without great difficulty; for ſhe enjoyed an eaſineſs of temper, that could accommodate itſelf to the emergencies of her fate; and her vivacity, by amuſing her imagination, preſerved her from the keener ſenſations of ſorrow. Thus determined and diſpoſed, ſhe did not ſend any ſort of anſwer, or the leaſt token of remembrance by Pipes, who was ſuffered to depart with a general compliment from the mother, and arrived at Wincheſter the next day.

Peregrine's eyes ſparkled when he ſaw his meſſenger come in, and he ſtretched out his hand in full confidence of receiving ſome particular mark of his Emilia's affection; but how was he confounded, when he found his hope ſo cruelly diſappointed! In an inſtant his countenance fell. He ſtood for ſome time ſilent and

 abaſhed,

abashed, then thrice repeated the interrogation of, 'What! not one word from Emilia?' And, dubious of his courier's discretion, enquired minutely into all the particulars of his reception. He asked if he had seen the young lady; if she was in good health; if he had found an opportunity of delivering his letter; and how she looked when he put it into her hand. Pipes answered, that he had never seen her in better health or higher spirits; that he had managed matters so as not only to present the billet unperceived, but also to ask her commands in private before he took his leave, when she told him that the letter required no reply. This last circumstance he considered as a manifest mark of disrespect, and gnawed his lips with resentment. Upon farther reflection, however, he supposed that she could not conveniently write by the messenger, and would undoubtedly favour him by the post. This consideration consoled him for the present, and he waited impatiently for the fruits of his hope; but after he had seen eight days elapsed without reaping the satisfaction with which he had flattered himself, his temper forsook him, he raved against the whole sex, and was seized with a fit of sudden chagrin; but his pride in a little time came to his assistance, and rescued him from the horrors of the melancholy fiend. He resolved to retort her own neglect upon his ungrateful mistress; his countenance gradually resumed its former serenity; and though by this time he was pretty well cured of his foppery, he appeared again at publick diversions with an air of gaiety and unconcern, that Emilia might have a chance of hearing how much, in all likelihood, he disregarded her disdain.

There are never wanting certain officious persons, who take pleasure in promoting intelligence of this sort. His behaviour soon reached the ears of Miss Gauntlet, and confirmed her in the opinion she had conceived from his letter; so that she fortified herself in her former sentiments, and bore his indifference with great philosophy. Thus, a correspondence which had

commenced with all the tenderneſs and ſincerity of love, and every promiſe of duration, was interrupted in its infancy by a miſunderſtanding occaſioned by the ſimplicity of Pipes, who never once reflected upon the conſequences of his deceit.

Though their mutual paſſion was by theſe means ſuppreſſed for the preſent, it was not altogether extinguiſhed, but glowed in ſecret, though even to themſelves unknown, until an occaſion which afterwards offered blew up the latent flame, and Love reſumed his empire in their breaſts.

While they moved, as it were, without the ſphere of each other's attraction, the commodore, fearing that Perry was in danger of involving himſelf in ſome pernicious engagement, reſolved, by advice of Mr. Jolter and his friend the pariſh prieſt, to recal him from the place where he had contracted ſuch imprudent connections, and ſend him to the univerſity, where his education might be compleated, and his fancy weaned from all puerile amuſements.

This plan had been propoſed to his own father, who, as hath been already obſerved, ſtood always neuter in every thing that concerned his eldeſt ſon; and, as for Mrs. Pickle, ſhe had never heard his name mentioned ſince his departure with any degree of temper or tranquillity, except when her huſband informed her that he was in a fair way of being ruined by his indiſcreet amour. It was then ſhe began to applaud her own foreſight, which had diſcerned the mark of reprobation in that vicious boy, and launched out in compariſon between him and Gammy; who, ſhe obſerved, was a child of uncommon parts and ſolidity, and, with the bleſſing of God, would be a comfort to his parents, and an ornament to the family.

Should I affirm that this favourite, whom ſhe commended ſo much, was in every reſpect the reverſe of what ſhe deſcribed; that he was a boy of mean capacity, and though remarkably diſtorted in his body, much more crooked in his diſpoſition; and that ſhe

had perſuaded her huſband to eſpouſe her opinion, though it was contrary to common ſenſe, as well as to his own perception; I am afraid the reader will think I repreſent a monſter that never exiſted in nature, and be apt to condemn the œconomy of my invention; nevertheleſs, there is nothing more true than every circumſtance of what I have advanced; and I wiſh the picture, ſingular as it is, may not be thought to reſemble more than one original.

CHAP. XX.

Peregrine is ſummoned to attend his Uncle; is more and more hated by his own Mother; appeals to his Father, whoſe Condeſcenſion is defeated by the Dominion of his Wife.

BUT waving theſe reflections, let us return to Peregrine, who received a ſummons to attend his uncle, and in a few days arrived with Mr. Jolter and Pipes at the garriſon, which he filled with joy and ſatisfaction. The alteration which, during his abſence, had happened in his perſon, was very favourable in his appearance; which, from that of a comely boy, was converted into that of a moſt engaging youth. He was already taller than a middle-ſized man, his ſhape aſcertained, his ſinews well knit, his mien greatly improved, and his whole figure as elegant and graceful, as if it had been caſt in the ſame mould with the Apollo of Belvidere.

Such an outſide could not fail of prepoſſeſſing people in his favour. The commodore, notwithſtanding the advantageous reports he had heard, found his expectation exceeded in the perſon of Peregrine, and ſignified his approbation in the moſt ſanguine terms. Mrs. Trunnion was ſtruck with his genteel addreſs, and received him with uncommon marks of complacency and affection: he was careſſed by all the people in the neighbourhood; who, while they admired his accompliſhments, could not help pitying his infatuated mother for being deprived of that unutterable delight which

any

any other parent would have enjoyed in the contemplation of ſuch an amiable ſon.

Divers efforts were made by ſome well-diſpoſed people, to conquer, if poſſible, this monſtrous prejudice; but their endeavours, inſtead of curing, ſerved only to inflame the diſtemper, and ſhe never could be prevailed upon to indulge him with the leaſt mark of maternal regard. On the contrary, her original diſguſt degenerated into ſuch inveteracy of hatred, that ſhe left no ſtone unturned to alienate the commodore's affection for this her innocent child, and even practiſed the moſt malicious defamation to accompliſh her purpoſe. Every day did ſhe abuſe her huſband's ear with ſome forged inſtance of Peregrine's ingratitude to his uncle, well knowing that it would reach the commodore's knowledge at night.

Accordingly, Mr. Pickle uſed to tell him at the club, that his hopeful favourite had ridiculed him in ſuch a company, and aſperſed his ſpouſe upon another occaſion; and thus retail the little ſcandalous iſſue of his own wife's invention. Luckily for Peregrine, the commodore paid no great regard to the authority of his informer, becauſe he knew from what canal his intelligence flowed: beſides, the youth had a ſtaunch friend in Mr. Hatchway, who never failed to vindicate him when he was thus unjuſtly accuſed, and always found argument enough to confute the aſſertions of his enemies. But though Trunnion had been dubious of the young gentleman's principles, and deaf to the remonſtrances of the lieutenant, Perry was provided with a bulwark ſtrong enough to defend him from all ſuch aſſaults. This was no other than his aunt, whoſe regard for him was perceived to increaſe in the ſame proportion as his own mother's diminiſhed; and, indeed, the augmentation of the one was, in all probability, owing to the decreaſe of the other; for the two ladies, with great civility, performed all the duties of good neighbourhood, and hated each other moſt piouſly in their hearts. Mrs,

Mrs. Pickle having been difobliged at the fplendor of her fifter's new equipage, had ever fince that time, in the courfe of her vifiting, endeavoured to make people merry with fatirical jokes on the poor lady's infirmities: and Mrs. Trunnion feized the very firft opportunity of making reprifals, by inveighing againft her unnatural behaviour to her own child; fo that Peregrine, as on the one hand he was abhorred, fo on the other was he careffed, in confequence of this contention; and I firmly believe, that the moft effectual method of deftroying his intereft at the garrifon, would have been the fhew of countenancing him at his father's houfe: but, whether this conjecture be reafonable or chimerical, certain it is, the experiment was never tried, and therefore Mr. Peregrine ran no rifque of being difgraced. The commodore, who affumed, and juftly too, the whole merit of his education, was now as proud of the youth's improvements, as if he had actually been his own offspring; and fometimes his affection rofe to fuch a pitch of enthufiafm, that he verily believed him to be the iffue of his own loins. Notwithftanding this favourable predicament in which our hero ftood with his aunt and her hufband, he could not help feeling the injury he fuffered from the caprice of his mother; and though the gaiety of his difpofition hindered him from afflicting himfelf with reflections of any gloomy caft, he did not fail to forefee that if any fudden accident fhould deprive him of the commodore, he would in all likelihood find himfelf in a very difagreeable fituation. Prompted by this confideration, he one evening accompanied his uncle to the club, and was introduced to his father, before that worthy gentleman had the leaft inkling of his arrival.

Mr. Gamaliel was never fo difconcerted as at this rencounter. His own difpofition would not fuffer him to do any thing that might create the leaft difturbance, or interrupt his evening's enjoyment; fo ftrongly was he impreffed with the terror of his wife, that he durft not yield to the tranquillity of his temper: and, as I have already

already obferved, his inclination was perfectly neutral. Thus diftracted between different motives, when Perry was prefented to him, he fat filent and abforpt, as if he did not or would not perceive the application; and when he was urged to declare himfelf by the youth, who pathetically begged to know how he had incurred his difpleafure, he anfwered in a peevifh ftrain—'Why, good now, child, what would you have me to do? your mother can't abide you.'—'If my mother is fo unkind, I will not call it unnatural,' faid Peregrine, the tears of indignation ftarting from his eyes, 'as to banifh me from her prefence and affection, without the leaft caufe affigned; I hope you will not be fo unjuft as to efpoufe her barbarous prejudice.' Before Mr. Pickle had time to reply to this expoftulation, for which he was not at all prepared, the commodore interpofed, and enforced his favourite's remonftrance, by telling Mr. Gamaliel that he was afhamed to fee any man drive in fuch a miferable manner under his wife's petticoat. 'As for my own part,' faid he, raifing his voice, and affuming a look of importance and command, 'before I would fuffer myfelf to be fteered all weathers by any woman in Chriftendom, d'ye fee! I'd raife fuch a hurricane about her ears, that—' Here he was interrupted by Mr. Hatchway, who thrufting his head towards the door in the attitude of one that liftens, cried, 'Ahey! there's your fpoufe come to pay us a vifit.' Trunnion's features that inftant adopted a new difpofition: fear and confufion took poffeffion of his countenance; his voice from a tone of vociferation funk into a whifper of—'Sure you muft be miftaken, Jack;' and in great perplexity he wiped off the fweat which had ftarted on his forehead at this falfe alarm. The lieutenant having thus punifhed him for the rhodomontade he had uttered, told him with an arch fneer, that he was deceived by the found of the outward door creaking upon it's hinges, which he miftook for Mrs. Trunnion's voice, and defired him to proceed with his admonitions to Mr.
Pickle.

Pickle. It is not to be denied that this arrogance was a little unseasonable in the commodore, who was in all respects as effectually subdued to the dominion of his wife, as the person whose submission he then ventured to condemn; with this difference of disposition: Trunnion's subjection was like that of a bear, chequered with fits of surliness and rage; whereas, Pickle bore the yoke like an ox, without repining. No wonder, then, that this indolence, this sluggishness, this stagnation of temper, rendered Gamaliel incapable of withstanding the arguments and importunity of his friends, to which he at length surrendered. He acquiesced in the justice of their observations, and taking his son by the hand, promised to favour him for the future with his love and fatherly protection.

But this laudable resolution did not last; Mrs. Pickle, still dubious of his constancy, and jealous of his communication with the commodore, never failed to interrogate him every night about the conversation that happened at the club; and regulate her exhortation according to the intelligence she received. He was no sooner, therefore, safely conveyed to the bed (that academy in which all notable wives communicate their lectures) when her catechism began; and she in a moment perceived something reluctant and equivocal in her husband's answers. Aroused at this discovery, she employed her influence and skill with such success, that he disclosed every circumstance of what had happened; and after having sustained a most severe rebuke for his simplicity and indiscretion, humbled himself so far as to promise that he would next day annul the condescensions he had made, and for ever renounce the ungracious object of her disgust. This undertaking was punctually performed in a letter to the commodore, which she herself dictated in these words—

'SIR,

'WHEREAS my good-nature being last 'night imposed upon, I was persuaded to countenance 'and promise I know not what to that vicious youth, 'whose

'whose parent I have the misfortune to be; I desire 'you will take notice that I revoke all such countenance and promises, and shall never look upon that 'man as my friend, who will henceforth in such a cause 'solicit, Sir, yours, &c. 'GAM. PICKLE.'

CHAP. XXI.

Trunnion is enraged at the Conduct of Pickle. Peregrine resents the Injustice of his Mother, to whom he explains his Sentiments in a Letter. Is entered at the University of Oxford, where he signalizes himself as a Youth of an enterprizing Genius.

UNSPEAKABLE were the transports of rage to which Trunnion was incensed by this absurd renunciation: he tore the letter with his gums (teeth he had none) spit with furious grimaces, in token of the contempt he entertained for the author, whom he not only damned as a lousy, scabby, nasty, scurvy, sculking, lubberly noodle, but resolved to challenge to single combat with fire and sword; but he was dissuaded from this violent measure, and appeased by the intervention and advice of the lieutenant and Mr. Jolter, who represented the message as the effect of the poor man's infirmity, for which he was rather an object of pity than of resentment; and turned the stream of his indignation against the wife, whom he reviled accordingly. Nor did Peregrine himself bear with patience this injurious declaration, the nature of which he no sooner understood from Hatchway, than equally shocked and exasperated, he retired to his apartment, and in the first emotions of his ire, produced the following epistle, which was immediately conveyed to his mother—

'MADAM,

'HAD nature formed me a bugbear to the 'sight, and inspired me with a soul as vicious as my 'body was detestable, perhaps I might have enjoyed 'particular marks of your affection and applause: seeing you have persecuted me with such unnatural aver'sion, for no other visible reason, than that of my dif'fering so widely in shape as well as disposition, from 'that

'that deformed urchin who is the object of your ten-
'derness and care. If those be the terms on which
'alone I can obtain your favour, I pray God you may
'never cease to hate, Madam, your most injured son,

'PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

This letter, which nothing but his passion and inexperience could excuse, had such an effect upon his mother, as may be easily conceived. She was enraged to a degree of frenzy against the writer: though at the same time she considered the whole as the production of Mrs. Trunnion's particular pique, and represented it to her husband as an insult that he was bound in honour to resent, by breaking off all correspondence with the commodore and his family. This was a bitter pill to Gamaliel; who, through a long course of years, was so habituated to Trunnion's company, that he could as easily have parted with a limb, as have relinquished the club all at once. He therefore ventured to represent his own incapacity to follow her advice, and begged that he might at least be allowed to drop the connection gradually: protesting that he would do his endeavour to give her all manner of satisfaction.

Meanwhile preparations were made for Peregrine's departure to the university, and in a few weeks he set out, in the seventeenth year of his age, accompanied by the same attendants who lived with him at Winchester. His uncle laid strong injunctions upon him to avoid the company of immodest women, to mind his learning, to let him hear of his welfare as often as he could spare time to write, and settled his appointments at the rate of five hundred a year, including his governor's salary, which was one fifth part of the sum. The heart of our young gentleman dilated at the prospect of the figure he should make with such a handsome annuity, the management of which was left at his own discretion: and he amused his imagination with the most agreeable reveries during his journey to Oxford, which he performed in two days. Here being introduced to the head of the college, to whom he had been recommended,

mended, accommodated with genteel apartments, entered as gentleman commoner in the books, and provided with a judicious tutor, instead of returning to the study of Greek and Latin, in which he thought himself already sufficiently instructed, he renewed his acquaintance with some of his old school-fellows, whom he found in the same situation, and was by them initiated into all the fashionable diversions of the place.

It was not long before he made himself remarkable for his spirit and humour, which were so acceptable to the bucks of the university, that he was admitted as a member of their corporation, and in a very little time became the most conspicuous personage of the whole fraternity; not that he valued himself upon his ability in smoaking the greatest number of pipes, and drinking the largest quantity of ale: these were qualifications of too gross a nature to captivate his refined ambition. He piqued himself on his talent for raillery, his genius and taste, his personal accomplishments, and his success at intrigue: nor were his excursions confined to the small villages in the neighbourhood, which are commonly visited once a week by the students for the sake of carnal recreation. He kept his own horses, traversed the whole country in parties of pleasure, attended all the races within fifty miles of Oxford, and made frequent jaunts to London, where he used to lie incognito during the best part of many a term.

The rules of the university were too severe to be observed by a youth of his vivacity; and therefore he became acquainted with the proctor by times. But all the checks he received were insufficient to moderate his career; he frequented taverns and coffee-houses, committed midnight frolicks in the streets, insulted all the sober and pacifick class of his fellow-students; the tutors themselves were not sacred from his ridicule; he laughed at the magistrate, and neglected every particular of college discipline.

In vain did they attempt to restrain his irregularities by the imposition of fines; he was liberal to profusion,

and therefore paid without reluctance. Thrice did he scale the windows of a tradesman, with whose daughter he had an affair of gallantry; as often was he obliged to seek his safety by a precipitate leap; and one night would, in all probability, have fallen a sacrifice to an ambuscade that was laid by the father, had not his trusty squire Pipes interposed in his behalf, and manfully rescued him from the clubs of his enemies.

In the midst of these excesses, Mr. Jolter finding his admonitions neglected, and his influence utterly destroyed, attempted to wean his pupil from his extravagant courses, by engaging his attention in some more laudable pursuit. With this view he introduced him into a club of politicians, who received him with great demonstrations of regard, accommodated themselves more than he could have expected to his jovial disposition, and while they revolved schemes for the reformation of the state, drank with such devotion to the accomplishment of their plans, that before parting, the cares of their patriotism were quite overwhelmed.

Peregrine, though he could not approve of their doctrine, resolved to attach himself for some time to their company; because he perceived ample subject for his ridicule, in the characters of these wrong-headed enthusiasts. It was a constant practice with them, in their midnight consistories, to swallow such plentiful draughts of inspiration, that their mysteries commonly ended like those of the Bacchanalian Orgia; and they were seldom capable of maintaining that solemnity of decorum which, by the nature of their functions, most of them were obliged to profess. Now as Peregrine's satirical disposition was never more gratified than when he had an opportunity of exposing grave characters in ridiculous attitudes, he laid a mischievous snare for his new confederates, which took effect in this manner. In one of their nocturnal deliberations, he promoted such a spirit of good fellowship, by the agreeable sallies of his wit, which were purposely levelled against their political adversaries, that by ten o'clock they were all ready

ready to join in the moſt extravagant propoſal that could be made. They broke their glaſſes in conſequence of his ſuggeſtion, drank healths out of their ſhoes, caps, and the bottoms of the candleſticks that ſtood before them, ſometimes ſtanding with one foot on a chair, and the knee bent on the edge of the table; and when they could no longer ſtand in that poſture, ſetting their bare poſteriors on the cold floor. They huzzaed, hallooed, danced, and ſung; and, in ſhort, were elevated to ſuch a pitch of intoxication, that when Peregrine propoſed that they ſhould burn their perriwigs, the hint was immediately approved, and they executed the frolick as one man. Their ſhoes and caps underwent the ſame fate, by the ſame inſtigation; and in this trim he led them forth into the ſtreet, where they reſolved to compel every body they ſhould find to ſubſcribe to their political creed, and pronounce the Shiboleth of their party. In the atchievement of this enterprize, they met with more oppoſition than they expected: they were encountered with arguments which they could not well withſtand; the noſes of ſome, and eyes of others, in a very little time bore the marks of obſtinate diſputation. Their conductor having at length engaged the whole body in a fray with another ſquadron, which was pretty much in the ſame condition, he very fairly gave them the ſlip, and ſlily retreated to his apartment, foreſeeing that his companions would ſoon be favoured with the notice of their ſuperiors: nor was he deceived in his prognoſtick; the proctor going his round, chanced to fall in with this tumultuous uproar, and interpoſing his authority, found means to quiet the diſturbance. He took cognizance of their names, and diſmiſſed the rioters to their reſpective chambers, not a little ſcandalized at the behaviour of ſome among them, whoſe buſineſs and duty it was to ſet far other examples to the youth under their care and direction.

About midnight, Pipes, who had orders to attend at a diſtance, and keep an eye upon Jolter, brought home that unfortunate governor upon his back, (Peregrine

having before-hand ſecured his admittance into the college;) and among other bruiſes he was found to have received a couple of contuſions on his face, which next morning appeared in a black circle that ſurrounded each eye. This was a mortifying circumſtance to a man of his character and deportment, eſpecially as he had received a meſſage from the proctor, who deſired to ſee him forthwith. With great humility and contrition he begged the advice of his pupil, who being uſed to amuſe himſelf with painting, aſſured Mr. Jolter, that he would cover thoſe ſigns of diſgrace with a ſlight coat of fleſh-colour, ſo dexterouſly, that it would be almoſt impoſſible to diſtinguiſh the artificial from the natural ſkin. The rueful governor, rather than expoſe ſuch opprobrious tokens to the obſervation and cenſure of the magiſtrate, ſubmitted to the expedient. Although his counſellor had over-rated his own ſkill, he was perſuaded to confide in the diſguiſe, and actually attended the proctor, with ſuch a ſtaring addition to the natural ghaſtlineſs of his features, that his viſage bore a very apt reſemblance to ſome of thoſe ferocious countenances that hang over the doors of certain taverns and alehouſes, under the denomination of the Saracen's head.

Such a remarkable alteration of phyſiognomy could not eſcape the notice of the moſt undiſcerning beholder, much leſs the penetrating eye of his ſevere judge, already whetted with what he had ſeen over-night. He was therefore upbraided with this ridiculous and ſhallow artifice, and together with the companions of his debauch, underwent ſuch a cutting reprimand, for the ſcandalous irregularity of his conduct, that all of them remained creſt-fallen, and were aſhamed, for many weeks, to appear in the publick execution of their duty.

Peregrine was too vain of his fineſſe, to conceal the part he acted in this comedy, with the particulars of which he regaled his companions, and thereby intailed upon himſelf the hate and reſentment of the community, whoſe maxims and practices he had diſcloſed; for

for he was conſidered as a ſpy, who had intruded himſelf into their ſociety, with a view of betraying it; or, at beſt, as an apoſtate and renegado from the faith and principles which he had profeſſed.

CHAP. XXII.

He is inſulted by his Tutor, whom he lampoons; makes a conſiderable Progreſs in polite Literature; and in an Excurſion to Windſor, meets with Emilia by Accident, and is very coldly received.

AMONG thoſe who ſuffered by his craft and infidelity was Mr. Jumble, his own tutor, who could not at all digeſt the mortifying affront he had received, and was reſolved to be revenged on the inſulting author. With this view he watched the conduct of Mr. Pickle with the utmoſt rancour of vigilance, and let ſlip no opportunity of treating him with diſreſpect, which he knew the diſpoſition of his pupil could leſs brook than any other ſeverity it was in his power to exerciſe.

Peregrine had been ſeveral mornings abſent from chapel; and as Mr. Jumble never failed to queſtion him in a very peremptory ſtyle about his non-attendance, he invented ſome very plauſible excuſes; but at length his ingenuity was exhauſted; he received a very galling rebuke for his profligacy of morals, and that he might feel it the more ſenſibly, he was ordered, by way of exerciſe, to compoſe a paraphraſe in Engliſh verſe, upon theſe two lines in Virgil—

Vane ligur, fruſtraque animis elate ſuperbis,
Necquicquam, patrias, tentâſti lubricus, artes.

The impoſition of this invidious theme had all the deſired effect upon Peregrine, who not only conſidered it as a piece of unmannerly abuſe levelled againſt his own conduct, but alſo as a retroſpective inſult on the memory of his grandfather, who (as he had been informed) was in his life-time more noted for his cunning than candour in trade.

Exaſperated at this inſtance of the pedant's audacity, he had well nigh (in his firſt tranſports) taken corporal

 ſatisfaction

ſatisfaction on the ſpot; but foreſeeing the troubleſome conſequences that would attend ſuch a flagrant outrage againſt the laws of the univerſity, he checked his indignation, and reſolved to revenge the injury in a more cool and contemptuous manner. Thus determined, he ſet on foot an enquiry into the particulars of Jumble's parentage and education. He learned that the father of this inſolent tutor was a bricklayer, that his mother ſold pyes, and that the ſon, at different periods of his youth, had amuſed himſelf in both occupations, before he converted his views to the ſtudy of learning. Fraught with this intelligence, he compoſed the following ballad in doggrel rhymes, and next day preſented it as a gloſs upon the text which the tutor had choſen.

Come, liſten, ye ſtudents of ev'ry degree,
I ſing of a wit and a tutor *perdie*,
A ſtateſman profound, a critick immenſe,
In ſhort, a mere jumble of learning and ſenſe:
And yet of his talents, though laudably vain,
His own family arts he cou'd never attain.

His father intending his fortune to build,
In his youth would have taught him the trowel to wield;
But the mortar of diſcipline never would ſtick,
For his ſkull was ſecur'd by a facing of brick;
And with all his endeavours of patience and pain,
The ſkill of his ſire he could never attain.

His mother, an houſewife, neat, artful, and wiſe,
Renown'd for her delicate biſcuit and pyes,
Soon alter'd his ſtudies, by flatt'ring his taſte,
From the raiſing of walls to the rearing of paſte!
But all her inſtructions were fruitleſs and vain,
The pye-making myſt'ry he ne'er could attain.

Yet true to his race, in his labours were ſeen
A jumble of both their profeſſions, I ween;
For, when his own genius he ventur'd to truſt,
His pyes ſeem'd of brick, and his houſes of cruſt.
Then, good Mr. Tutor, pray be not ſo vain,
Since your family arts you could never attain.

This

This impudent production was the moft effectual vengeance he could have taken on his tutor, who had all the fupercilious arrogance and ridiculous pride of a low-born pedant. Inftead of overlooking this petulant piece of fatire with that temper and decency of difdain that became a perfon of his gravity and ftation, he no fooner caft his eye over the performance, than the blood rufhed into his countenance, which immediately after exhibited a ghaftly pale colour. With a quivering lip he told his pupil that he was an impertinent jackanapes, and he would take care that he fhould be expelled from the univerfity, for having prefumed to write and deliver fuch a licentious and fcurrilous libel. Peregrine anfwered with great refolution, that when the provocation he had received fhould be known, he was perfuaded that he fhould be acquitted by the opinion of all impartial people; and that he was ready to fubmit the whole to the decifion of the mafter.

This arbitration he propofed, becaufe he knew the mafter and Jumble were at variance; and for that reafon the tutor durft not venture to put the caufe on fuch an iffue. Nay, when this reference was mentioned, Jumble, who was naturally jealous, fufpected that Peregrine had a promife of protection, before he undertook to commit fuch an outrageous infult; and this notion had fuch an effect upon him, that he refolved to devour his vexation, and wait for a more proper opportunity of gratifying his hate. Meanwhile, copies of the ballad were diftributed among the ftudents, who fung it under the very nofe of Mr. Jumble, to the tune of 'A cobler there was,' &c. and the triumph of our hero was compleat. Neither was his whole time devoted to the riotous extravagances of youth. He enjoyed many lucid intervals, during which he contracted a more intimate acquaintance with the claffícks, applied himfelf to the reading of hiftory, improved his tafte for painting and mufick, in which he made fome progrefs; and, above all things, cultivated the ftudy of natural philofophy. It was generally after a courfe of clofe

attention to ſome of theſe arts and ſciences, that his diſpoſition broke out into thoſe irregularities and wild ſallies of a luxuriant imagination, for which he became ſo remarkable; and he was perhaps the only young man in Ox—d, who at the ſame time maintained an intimate and friendly intercourſe with the moſt unthinking, as well as with the moſt ſedate ſtudents at the univerſity.

It is not to be ſuppoſed that a young man of Peregrine's vanity, inexperience, and profuſion, could ſuit his expence to his allowance, liberal as it was; for he was not one of thoſe fortunate people who are born œconomiſts, and knew not the art of witholding his purſe when he ſaw his companion in difficulty. Thus naturally generous and expenſive, he ſquandered away his money, and made a moſt ſplendid appearance upon the receipt of his quarterly appointment; but long before the third month was elapſed, his finances were conſumed; and as he could not ſtoop to aſk an extraordinary ſupply, was too proud to borrow, and too haughty to run in debt with tradeſmen, he devoted thoſe periods of poverty to the proſecution of his ſtudies, and ſhone forth again at the revolution of quarter-day.

In one of theſe irruptions, he and ſome of his companions went to Windſor, in order to ſee the royal apartments in the caſtle, whither they repaired in the afternoon; and as Peregrine ſtood contemplating the picture of Hercules and Omphale, one of his fellow-ſtudents whiſpered in his ear—' Z—ds, Pickle! there are two fine girls.' He turned inſtantly about, and in one of them recognized his almoſt forgotten Emilia. Her appearance acted upon his imagination like a ſpark of fire that falls among gunpowder; that paſſion which had lain dormant for the ſpace of two years flaſhed up in a moment, and he was ſeized with an univerſal trepidation. She perceived and partook of his emotion; for their ſouls, like uniſons, vibrated with the ſame impulſe. However, ſhe called her pride and reſentment to her aid, and found reſolution enough to retire from ſuch a dangerous ſcene. Alarmed at her retreat, he collected

collected all his aſſurance, and impelled by love which he could no longer reſiſt, followed her into the next room, where in the moſt diſconcerted manner he accoſted her with—'Your humble ſervant, Miſs Gauntlet!' to which ſalutation ſhe replied, with an affectation of indifference, that did not, however, conceal her agitation—'Your ſervant, Sir!' and immediately extending her finger towards the picture of Duns Scotus, which is fixed over one of the doors, aſked her companion, in a giggling tone, if ſhe did not think he looked like a conjuror. Peregrine, nettled into ſpirits by this reception, anſwered for the other lady, that it was an eaſy matter to be a conjuror in thoſe times, when the ſimplicity of the age aſſiſted his divination; but were he, or Merlin himſelf, to riſe from the dead now, when ſuch deceit and diſſimulation prevail, they would not be able to earn their bread by the profeſſion. 'O, Sir!' ſaid ſhe, turning full upon him, 'without doubt they would adopt new maxims; it is no diſparagement, in this enlightened age, for one to alter one's opinion.'—'No, ſure, Madam!' replied the youth, with ſome precipitation, 'provided the change be for the better.'—'And ſhould it happen otherwiſe,' retorted the nymph, with a flirt of her fan, 'inconſtancy will never want countenance from the practice of mankind.'—'True, Madam,' reſumed our hero, fixing his eyes upon her; 'examples of levity are every where to be met with.'—'O Lord, Sir!' cried Emilia, toſſing her head, 'you'll ſcarce ever find a fop without it.' By this time his companion, ſeeing him engaged with one of the ladies, entered into converſation with the other; and in order to favour his friend's gallantry, conducted her into the next apartment, on pretence of entertaining her with the ſight of a remarkable piece of painting.

Peregrine laying hold on this opportunity of being alone with the object of his love, aſſumed a moſt ſeducing tenderneſs of look, and heaving a profound ſigh, aſked if ſhe had utterly diſcarded him from her remembrance. Reddening at this pathetick queſtion, which recalled

recalled the memory of the imagined ſlight he had put upon her, ſhe anſwered in great confuſion, ' Sir, I believe I once had the pleaſure of ſeeing you at a ball in Wincheſter.'—' Miſs Emilia,' ſaid he, very gravely, ' will you be ſo candid as to tell me what miſbehaviour of mine you are pleaſed to puniſh, by reſtricting your remembrance to that ſingle occaſion?'—' Mr. Pickle,' ſhe replied, in the ſame tone, ' it is neither my province nor inclination to judge your conduct; and therefore you miſapply your queſtion, when you aſk ſuch an explanation of me.'—' At leaſt,' reſumed our lover, ' give me the melancholy ſatisfaction to know for what offence of mine you refuſed to take the leaſt notice of that letter which I had the honour to write from Wincheſter by your own expreſs permiſſion.'—' Your letter, ſaid Miſs, with great vivacity, ' neither required, nor, in my opinion, deſerved an anſwer; and to be free with you, Mr. Pickle, it was but a ſhallow artifice to rid yourſelf of a correſpondence you had deigned to ſolicit. Peregrine, confounded at this repartee, replied, that howſoever he might have failed in point of elegance or diſcretion, he was ſure he had not been deficient in expreſſions of reſpect and devotion for thoſe charms which it was his pride to adore: ' As for the verſes,' ſaid he, ' I own they were unworthy of the theme; but I flattered myſelf that they would have merited your acceptance, though not your approbation, and been conſidered not ſo much as the proof of my genius, as the genuine effuſion of my love.'—' Verſes!' cried Emilia, with an air of aſtoniſhment; ' what verſes? I really don't underſtand you.'—The young genman was thunderſtruck at this exclamation, to which, after a long pauſe, he anſwered—' I begin to ſuſpect, and heartily wiſh, it may appear that we may have miſunderſtood each other from the beginning. Pray, Miſs Gauntlet, did you not find a copy of verſes incloſed in that unfortunate letter?'—' Truly, Sir,' ſaid the lady, ' I am not ſo much of a connoiſſeur as to diſtinguiſh whether that facetious production which you merrily

merrily ſtile an unfortunate letter, was compoſed in verſe or proſe; but, methinks, the jeſt is a little too ſtale to be brought upon the carpet again.' So ſaying, ſhe tripped away to her companion, and left her lover in a moſt tumultuous ſuſpenſe. He now perceived that her neglect of his addreſſes when he was at Wincheſter, muſt have been owing to ſome myſtery which he could not comprehend: and ſhe began to ſuſpect, and to hope, that the letter which ſhe received was ſpurious, though ſhe could not conceive how that could poſſibly happen, as it had been delivered to her by the hands of his own ſervant.

However, ſhe reſolved to leave the taſk of unravelling the affair to him, who, ſhe knew, would infallibly exert himſelf for his own as well as her ſatisfaction. She was not deceived in her opinion; he went up to her again at the ſtair-caſe, and as they were unprovided with a male-attendant, inſiſted upon ſquiring the ladies to their lodgings. Emilia ſaw his drift, which was no other than to know where ſhe lived; and though ſhe approved of his contrivance, thought it was incumbent upon her, for the ſupport of her own dignity, to decline the civility: ſhe therefore thanked him for his polite offer, but would by no means conſent to his giving himſelf ſuch unneceſſary trouble, eſpecially as they had a very little way to walk. He was not repulſed by this refuſal, the nature of which he perfectly underſtood; nor was ſhe ſorry to ſee him perſevere in his determination: he therefore accompanied them in their return, and made divers efforts to ſpeak with Emilia in particular; but ſhe had a ſpice of the coquette in her diſpoſition, and being determined to whet his impatience, artfully baffled all his endeavours, by keeping her companion continually engaged in the converſation, which turned upon the venerable appearance and imperial ſituation of the place. Thus tantalized, he lounged with them to the door of the houſe in which they lodged, when his miſtreſs perceiving by the countenance of her comrade, that ſhe was on the point of deſiring

firing him to walk in, checked her intention with a frown, then turning to Mr. Pickle, dropped him a very formal curtsey, seized the other young lady by the arm, and saying, 'Come, cousin Sophy!' vanished in a moment.

CHAP. XXIII.

After sundry unsuccessful Efforts, he finds Means to come to an Explanation with his Mistress; and a Reconciliation ensues.

PEREGRINE, disconcerted at their sudden disappearance, stood for some minutes gaping in the street, before he could get the better of his surprize; and then deliberated with himself whether he should demand immediate admittance to his mistress, or chuse some other method of application. Piqued at her abrupt behaviour, though pleased with her spirit, he set his invention to work, in order to contrive some means of seeing her; and in a fit of musing arrived at the inn, where he found his companions whom he had left at the castle-gate. They had already made inquiry about the ladies, in consequence of which he learned that Miss Sophy was daughter of a gentleman in town to whom his mistress was related; that an intimate friendship subsisted between the two young ladies; that Emilia had lived about a month with her cousin, and appeared at the last assembly, where she was universally admired; and that several young gentlemen of fortune had since that time teazed her with addresses.

Our hero's ambition was flattered, and his passion inflamed, with this intelligence; and he swore within himself that he would not quit the spot until he should have obtained an undisputed victory over all his rivals.

That same evening he composed a most eloquent epistle, in which he earnestly intreated that she would favour him with an opportunity of vindicating his conduct; but she would neither receive his billet, nor see his messenger. Baulked in this effort, he inclosed it in a new cover, directed by another hand, and ordered Pipes to ride next morning to London, on purpose to deliver

deliver it at the poſt-office; that coming by ſuch conveyance, ſhe might have no ſuſpicion of the author, and open it before ſhe ſhould be aware of the deceit.

Three days he waited patiently for the effect of this ſtratagem, and in the afternoon of the fourth ventured to hazard a formal viſit, in quality of an old acquaintance. But here too he failed in his attempt; ſhe was indiſpoſed, and could not ſee company. Theſe obſtacles ſerved only to increaſe his eagerneſs; he ſtill adhered to his former reſolution; and his companions underſtanding his determination, left him next day to his own inventions. Thus relinquiſhed to his own ideas, he doubled his aſſiduity, and practiſed every method his imagination could ſuggeſt, in order to promote his plan.

Pipes was ſtationed all day long within ſight of her door, that he might be able to give his maſter an account of her motions; but ſhe never went abroad except to viſit in the neighbourhood, and was always houſed before Peregrine could be apprized of her appearance. He went to church with a view of attracting her notice, and humbled his deportment before her; but ſhe was ſo miſchievouſly devout as to look at nothing but her book, ſo that he was not favoured with one glance of regard. He frequented the coffee-houſe, and attempted to contract an acquaintance with Miſs Sophy's father, who, he hoped, would invite him to his houſe; but this expectation was alſo defeated. That prudent gentleman looked upon him as one of thoſe forward fortune-hunters who go about the country ſeeking whom they may devour, and warily diſcouraged all his advances. Chagrined by ſo many unſucceſsful endeavours, he began to deſpair of accompliſhing his aim; and, as the laſt ſuggeſtion of his art, paid off his lodging, took horſe at noon, and departed, in all appearance, for the place from whence he had come. He rode, however, but a few miles, and in the duſk of the evening returned unſeen, alighted at another inn, ordered Pipes to ſtay within doors, and keeping himſelf

incognito,

incognito, employed another person as a centinel upon Emilia.

It was not long before he reaped the fruits of his ingenuity. Next day in the afternoon, he was informed by his spy, that the two young ladies were gone to walk in the park, whither he followed them on the instant, fully determined to come to an explanation with his mistress, even in presence of her friend, who might possibly be prevailed upon to interest her in his behalf.

When he saw them at such a distance that they could not return to town before he should have an opportunity of putting his resolution in practice, he mended his pace, and found means to appear before them so suddenly, that Emilia could not help expressing her surprize in a scream. Our lover putting on a mien of humility and mortification, begged to know if her resentment was implacable; and asked why she had so cruelly refused to grant him the common privilege that every criminal enjoyed. 'Dear Miss Sophy,' said he, addressing himself to her companion, 'give me leave to implore your intercession with your cousin; I am sure you have humanity enough to espouse my cause, did you but know the justice of it, and I flatter myself that by your kind interposition, I may be able to rectify that fatal misunderstanding which hath made me wretched.'—'Sir,' said Sophy, 'you appear like a gentleman, and I doubt not but your behaviour has been always suitable to your appearance; but you must excuse me from undertaking any such office in behalf of a person whom I have not the honour to know.'—'Madam,' answered Peregrine, 'I hope Miss Emy will justify my pretensions to that character, notwithstanding the mystery of her displeasure, which, upon my honour, I cannot for my soul explain.'—'Lord! Mr. Pickle,' said Emilia, (who had by this time recollected herself) 'I never questioned your gallantry and taste, but I am resolved that you shall never have cause to exercise your talents at my expence; so that you teaze yourself and

me

me to no purpose!—Come, Sophy, let us walk home again.'—'Good God, Madam,' cried the lover, with great emotion, 'why will you distract me with such barbarous indifference? Stay, dear Emilia! I conjure you on my knees to stay and hear me: by all that is sacred! I was not to blame; you must have been imposed upon by some villain who envied my good fortune, and took some treacherous method to ruin my love.'

Miss Sophy, who possessed a large stock of good-nature, and to whom her cousin had communicated the cause of her reserve, seeing the young gentleman so much affected with that disdain which she knew to be feigned, laid hold on Emilia's sleeve, saying with a smile, 'Not quite so fast, Emily! I begin to perceive that this is a love quarrel, and therefore there may be hopes of a reconciliation; for I suppose both parties are open to conviction.'—'For my own part,' cried Peregrine with great eagerness, 'I appeal to Miss Sophy's decision. But why do I say, appeal? Though I am conscious of having committed no offence, I am ready to submit to any penance, let it be never so rigorous, that my fair inslaver herself shall impose, provided it will entitle me to her favour and forgiveness at last.' Emily, well nigh overcome by this declaration, told him, that as she taxed him with no guilt, she expected no atonement; and pressed her companion to return into town. But Sophy, who was too indulgent to her friend's real inclination, to comply with her request, observed that the gentleman seemed so reasonable in his concessions, she began to think her cousin was in the wrong, and felt herself disposed to act as umpire in the dispute.

Overjoyed at this condescension, Mr. Pickle thanked her in the most rapturous terms, and in the transport of his expectation, kissed the hand of his kind mediatrix; a circumstance which had a remarkable effect on the countenance of Emilia, who did not seem to relish the warmth of his acknowledgment.

After many supplications on one hand, and pressing remonstrances on the other, she yielded at length; and

turning to her lover, while her face was overſpread with bluſhes, 'Well, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'ſuppoſing I were to put the difference on that iſſue, how could you excuſe the ridiculous letter which you ſent to me from Wincheſter?' This expoſtulation introduced a diſcuſſion of the whole affair, in which all the circumſtances were canvaſſed; and Emilia ſtill affirmed, with great heat, that the letter muſt have been calculated to affront her; for ſhe could not ſuppoſe the author was ſo weak as to deſign it for any other purpoſe.

Peregrine, who ſtill retained in his memory the ſubſtance of this unlucky epiſtle, as well as the verſes which were incloſed, could recollect no particular expreſſion which could have juſtly given the leaſt umbrage; and therefore, in the agonies of perplexity, begged that the whole might be ſubmitted to the judgment of Miſs Sophy; and faithfully promiſed to ſtand to her award.

In ſhort, this propoſal was with ſeeming reluctance embraced by Emilia, and an appointment made to meet next day in the ſame place, whither both parties were deſired to come provided with their credentials, according to which definitive ſentence would be pronounced.

Our lover having ſucceeded thus far, overwhelmed Sophy with acknowledgments on account of her generous mediation, and in the courſe of their walk, which Emilia was now in no hurry to conclude, whiſpered a great many tender proteſtations in the ear of his miſtreſs, who, nevertheleſs, continued to act upon the reſerve, until her doubts ſhould be more fully reſolved.

Mr. Pickle having found means to amuſe them in the fields till the twilight, was obliged to wiſh them good even, after having obtained a ſolemn repetition of their promiſe to meet him at the appointed time and place; and then retreated to his apartment, where he ſpent the whole night in various conjectures on the ſubject of this letter, the Gordian knot of which he could by no means untie.

One while he imagined that ſome wag had played a trick upon his meſſenger, in conſequence of which Emilia

fia had received a suppositious letter; but, upon farther reflection, he could not conceive the practicability of any such deceit. Then he began to doubt the sincerity of his mistress; who, perhaps, had only made that an handle for discarding him, at the request of some favoured rival: but his own integrity forbade him to harbour this mean suspicion; and therefore he was again involved in the labyrinth of perplexity. Next day he waited on the rack of impatience for the hour of five in the afternoon; which no sooner struck, than he ordered Pipes to attend him, in case there should be occasion for his evidence; and repaired to the place of rendezvous, where he had not tarried five minutes before the ladies appeared. Mutual compliments being passed, and the attendants stationed at a convenient distance, Peregrine persuaded them to sit down upon the grass, under the shade of a spreading oak, that they might be more at their ease; while he stretched himself at their feet, and desired that the paper on which his doom depended might be examined. It was accordingly put into the hands of his fair arbitress, who read it immediately with an audible voice. The first two words of it were no sooner pronounced, than he started with great emotion, and raised himself upon his hand and knee, in which posture he listened to the rest of the sentence; then sprung upon his feet in the utmost astonishment, and glowing with resentment at the same time, exclaimed, 'Hell and the devil! what's all that? Sure you make a jest of me, Madam.'—'Pray, Sir,' said Sophy, 'give me the hearing for a few moments, and then urge what you shall think proper in your own defence.' Having thus cautioned him she proceeded; but before she had finished one half of the performance her gravity forsook her, and she was seized with a violent fit of laughter, in which neither of the lovers could help joining, notwithstanding the resentment which at that instant prevailed in the breasts of both. The judge, however, in a little time, resumed her solemnity, and having read the remaining part of this curious epistle,

all three continued ſtaring at each other alternately for the ſpace of half a minute, and then broke forth at the ſame inſtant in another paroxyſm of mirth. From this unanimous convulſion, one would have thought that both parties were extremely well pleaſed with the joke, yet this was by no means the caſe.

Emilia imagined, that notwithſtanding his affected ſurprize, her lover, in ſpite of himſelf, had renewed the laugh at her expence, and in ſo doing, applauded his own unmannerly ridicule. This ſuppoſition could not fail of raiſing and reviving her indignation, while Peregrine highly reſented the indignity with which he ſuppoſed himſelf treated, in their attempting to make him the dupe of ſuch a groſs and ludicrous artifice. This being the ſituation of their thoughts, their mirth was ſucceeded by a mutual gloomineſs of aſpect; and the judge, addreſſing herſelf to Mr. Pickle, aſked if he had any thing to offer why ſentence ſhould not be pronounced. 'Madam,' anſwered the culprit, 'I am ſorry to find myſelf ſo low in the opinion of your couſin, as to be thought capable of being deceived by ſuch a ſhallow contrivance.'—'Nay, Sir,' ſaid Emilia, 'the contrivance is your own; and I cannot help admiring your confidence in imputing it to me.'—'Upon my honour, Miſs Emily,' reſumed our hero, 'you wrong my underſtanding as well as my love, in accuſing me of having written ſuch a ſilly impertinent performance; the very appearance and addreſs of it is ſo unlike the letter which I did myſelf the honour to write, that I dare ſay my man, even at this diſtance of time, will remember the difference.' So ſaying, he extended his voice, and beckoned to Pipes, who immediately drew near. His miſtreſs ſeemed to object to the evidence, by obſerving, that to be ſure Mr. Pipes had his cue; when Peregrine begging ſhe would ſpare him the mortification of conſidering him in ſuch a diſhonourable light, deſired his valet to examine the outſide of the letter, and recollect if it was the ſame which he had delivered to Miſs Gauntlet about two years ago. Pipes having taken

taken a ſuperficial view of it, pulled up his breeches, ſaying, 'Mayhap it is, but we have made ſo many trips, and been in ſo many creeks and corners ſince that time, that I can't pretend to be certain; for I neither keep journal nor log-book of our proceedings.' Emilia commended him for his candour, at the ſame time darting a ſarcaſtick look at his maſter, as if ſhe thought he had tampered with his ſervant's integrity in vain; and Peregrine began to rave and curſe his fate, for having ſubjected him to ſuch mean ſuſpicion, atteſting heaven and earth in the moſt earneſt manner, that far from having compoſed and conveyed that ſtupid production, he had never ſeen it before, nor been privy to the leaſt circumſtance of the plan.

Pipes, now for the firſt time, perceived the miſchief which he had occaſioned, and moved with the tranſports of his maſter, for whom he had a moſt inviolable attachment, frankly declared he was ready to make oath that Mr. Pickle had no hand in the letter which he delivered. All three were amazed at this confeſſion, the meaning of which they could not comprehend. Peregrine, after ſome pauſe, leaped upon Pipes, and ſeizing him by the throat, exclaimed in an extaſy of rage, 'Raſcal! tell me this inſtant what became of the letter I intruſted to your care?' The patient valet, half ſtrangled as he was, ſquirted a collection of tobacco juice out of one corner of his mouth, and with great deliberation replied, 'Why, burnt it; you wouldn't have me give the young woman a thing that ſhook all in the wind in tatters, would you?' The ladies interpoſed in behalf of the diſtreſſed ſquire, from whom, by dint of queſtions which he had neither art nor inclination to evade, they extorted an explanation of the whole affair.

Such ridiculous ſimplicity and innocence of intention appeared in the compoſition of his expedient, that even the remembrance of all the chagrin which it had produced, could not rouze their indignation, or enable them to reſiſt a third eruption of laughter, which they forthwith underwent. Pipes

Pipes was dismissed with many menacing injunctions, to beware of such conduct for the future; Emilia stood with a confusion of joy and tenderness in her countenance; Peregrine's eyes kindled into rapture; and when Miss Sophy pronounced the sentence of reconciliation, advanced to his mistress, saying—'Truth is mighty, and will prevail!' then clasping her in his arms, very imprudently ravished a kiss, which she had not power to refuse. Nay, such was the impulse of his joy, that he took the same freedom with the lips of Sophy; calling her his dear mediatrix and guardian angel; and behaved with such extravagance of transport, as plainly evinced the fervour and sincerity of his love.

I shall not pretend to repeat the tender protestations that were uttered on one side, or describe the bewitching glances of approbation with which they were received on the other; suffice it to say, that the endearing intimacy of their former connection was instantly renewed, and Sophy, who congratulated them upon the happy termination of their quarrel, favoured with their mutual confidence. In consequence of this happy pacification, they deliberated upon the means of seeing each other often; and as he could not, without some previous introduction, visit her openly at the house of her relation, they agreed to meet every afternoon in the park till the next assembly, at which he would solicit her as a partner, and she be unengaged, in expectation of his request. By this connection he would be intitled to visit her next day, and thus an avowed correspondence would of course commence. This plan was actually put in execution, and attended with a circumstance which had well nigh produced some mischievous consequence, had not Peregrine's good fortune been superior to his discretion.

CHAP. XXIV.

He atchieves an Adventure at the Assembly, and quarrels with his Governor.

AT the assembly were no fewer than three gentlemen of fortune, who rivalled our lover in his passion for Emilia, and who had severally begged the honour of dancing with her upon that occasion. She had excused herself to each, on pretence of a slight indisposition that she foresaw would detain her from the ball, and desired they would provide themselves with other partners. Obliged to admit her excuse, they accordingly followed her advice; and after they had engaged themselves beyond the power of retracting, had the mortification to see her there unclaimed.

They in their turn made up to her, and expressed their surprize and concern at finding her in the assembly unprovided, after she had declined their invitation; but she told them that her cold had forsaken her since she had the pleasure of seeing them, and that she would rely upon accident for a partner. Just as she pronounced these words to the last of the three, Peregrine advanced as an utter stranger, bowed with great respect, told her he understood she was unengaged, and would think himself highly honoured in being accepted as her partner for the night; and he had the good fortune to succeed in his application.

As they were by far the handsomest and best accomplished couple in the room, they could not fail of attracting the notice and admiration of the spectators, which inflamed the jealousy of his three competitors, who immediately entered into a conspiracy against this gaudy stranger; whom, as their rival, they resolved to affront in publick. Pursuant to the plan which they projected for this purpose, the first country-dance was no sooner concluded, than one of them, with his partner, took place of Peregrine and his mistress, contrary to the regulation of the ball. Our lover imputing his behaviour to inadvertency, informed the gentleman of

his

his miſtake, and civilly deſired he would rectify his error. The other told him, in an imperious tone, that he wanted none of his advice, and bade him mind his own affairs. Peregrine anſwered with ſome warmth, and inſiſted upon his right; a diſpute commenced, high words enſued, in the courſe of which, our impetuous youth hearing himſelf reviled with the appellation of ſcoundrel, pulled off his antagoniſt's periwig, and flung it in his face. The ladies immediately ſhrieked, the gentlemen interpoſed, Emilia was ſeized with a fit of trembling, and conducted to her ſeat by her youthful admirer, who begged pardon for having diſcompoſed her, and vindicated what he had done, by repreſenting the neceſſity he was under to reſent the provocation he had received.

Though ſhe could not help owning the juſtice of his plea, ſhe was not the leſs concerned at the dangerous ſituation in which he involved himſelf; and in the utmoſt conſternation and anxiety, inſiſted upon going directly home: he could not reſiſt her importunities, and her couſin being determined to accompany her, he eſcorted them to their lodgings, where he wiſhed them good night, after having, in order to quiet their apprehenſions, proteſted that if his opponent was ſatisfied, he ſhould never take any ſtep towards the proſecution of the quarrel. Meanwhile the aſſembly-room became a ſcene of tumult and uproar; the perſon who conceived himſelf injured, ſeeing Peregrine retire, ſtruggled with his companions, in order to purſue and take ſatisfaction of our hero, whom he loaded with terms of abuſe, and challenged to ſingle combat.

The director of the ball held a conſultation with all the ſubſcribers who were preſent, and it was determined by a majority of votes, that the two gentlemen who had occaſioned the diſturbance ſhould be deſired to withdraw. This reſolution being ſignified to one of the parties then preſent, he made ſome difficulty of complying, but was perſuaded to ſubmit by his two confe-

derates,

derates, who accompanied him to the ſtreet-door, where he was met by Peregrine on his return to the aſſembly.

This cholerick gentleman, who was a country ſquire, no ſooner ſaw his rival, than he began to brandiſh his cudgel in a menacing poſture; when our adventurous youth ſtepping back with one foot, laid his hand upon the hilt of his ſword, which he drew half way out of the ſcabbard. This attitude, and the ſight of the blade, which gliſtened by moon-light in his face, checked, in ſome meaſure, the ardour of his aſſailant, who deſired he would lay aſide his toaſter, and take a bout with him at equal arms. Peregrine, who was an expert cudgel-player, accepted the invitation: then exchanging weapons with Pipes, who ſtood behind him, put himſelf in a poſture of defence, and received the attack of his adverſary, who ſtruck at random without either ſkill or œconomy. Pickle could have beaten the cudgel out of his hand at the firſt blow, but as in that caſe he would have been obliged in honour to give immediate quarter, he reſolved to diſcipline his antagoniſt without endeavouring to diſable him, until he ſhould be heartily ſatisfied with the vengeance he had taken. With this view he returned the ſalute, and raiſed ſuch a clatter about the ſquire's pate, that one who had heard without ſeeing the application, would have miſtaken the ſound for that of a ſalt-box, in the hand of a dextrous Merry-Andrew belonging to one of the booths at Bartholomew-Fair. Neither was this ſalutation confined to his head; his ſhoulders, arms, thighs, ankles, and ribs, were viſited with amazing rapidity, while Tom Pipes ſounded the charge through his fiſt. Peregrine, tired with this exerciſe, which had almoſt bereft his enemy of ſenſation, at laſt ſtruck the deciſive blow, in conſequence of which the ſquire's weapon flew out of his graſp, and he allowed our hero to be the better man. Satisfied with this acknowledgment, the victor walked up ſtairs with ſuch elevation of ſpirits, and inſolence of mien, that nobody choſe to intimate the reſolution which had been taken in his abſence: there

having

having amufed himfelf for fome time in beholding the country-dances, he retreated to his lodging, where he indulged himfelf all night in the contemplation of his own fuccefs.

Next day in the forenoon he went to vifit his partner; and the gentleman at whofe houfe fhe lived, having been informed of his family and condition, received him with great courtefy, as the acquaintance of his coufin Gauntlet, and invited him to dinner that fame day.

Emilia was remarkably well pleafed, when fhe underftood the iffue of his adventure, which began to make fome noife in town, even though it deprived her of a wealthy admirer. The fquire having confulted an attorney about the nature of the difpute, in hopes of being able to profecute Peregrine for an affault, found little encouragement to go to law; he therefore refolved to pocket the infult and injury he had undergone, and to difcontinue his addreffes to her who was the caufe of both.

Our lover being told by his miftrefs, that fhe propofed to ftay a fortnight longer at Windfor, he determined to enjoy her company all that time, and then to give her a convoy to the houfe of her mother, whom he longed to fee. In confequence of this plan, he every day contrived fome frefh party of pleafure for the ladies, to whom he had by this time free accefs; and entangled himfelf fo much in the fnares of love, that he feemed quite enchanted by Emilia's charms, which were now indeed almoft irrefiftible. While he thus heedlefsly roved in the flowery paths of pleafure, his governor at Oxford, alarmed at the unufual duration of his abfence, went to the young gentlemen who had accompanied him in his excurfion, and very earneftly intreated them to tell him what they knew concerning his pupil; they accordingly gave him an account of the rencounter that happened between Peregrine and Mifs Emily Gauntlet in the caftle, and mentioned circumftances

cumſtances ſufficient to convince him that his charge was very dangerouſly engaged.

Far from having an authority over Peregrine, Mr. Jolter durſt not even diſoblige him; therefore, inſtead of writing to the commodore, he took horſe immediately, and that ſame night reached Windſor, where he found his ſtray ſheep very much ſurprized at his unexpected arrival.

The governor deſiring to have ſome ſerious converſation with him, they ſhut themſelves up in an apartment; when Jolter, with great ſolemnity, communicated the cauſe of his journey, which was no other than his concern for his pupil's welfare; and very gravely undertook to prove by mathematical demonſtration, that this intrigue, if farther purſued, would tend to the young gentleman's ruin and diſgrace. This ſingular propoſition raiſed the curioſity of Peregrine, who promiſed to yield all manner of attention, and deſired him to begin without farther preamble.

The governor, encouraged by this appearance of candour, expreſſed his ſatisfaction in finding him ſo open to conviction, and told him he would proceed upon geometrical principles. Then hemming thrice, obſerved, that no mathematical inquiries could be carried on, except upon certain *data*, or conceſſions to truths, that were ſelf-evident; and therefore he muſt crave his aſſent to a few axioms, which he was ſure Mr. Pickle would ſee no reaſon to diſpute. 'In the firſt place, then,' ſaid he, 'you will grant, I hope, that youth and diſcretion are with reſpect to each other as two parallel lines, which, though infinitely produced, remain ſtill equi-diſtant, and will never coincide; then you muſt allow, that paſſion acts upon the human mind, in a ratio compounded of the acuteneſs of ſenſe, and conſtitutional heat; and, thirdly, you will not deny, that the angle of remorſe is equal to that of precipitation. Theſe *poſtulata* being admitted,' added he, taking pen, ink, and paper, and drawing a parallelogram, 'let youth be repreſented by the right line *a*, *b*, and diſcre-

tion

tion by another right line *c, d,* parallel to the former. Compleat the parallelogram *a, b, c, d,* and let the point of interfection, *b,* reprefent perdition. Let paffion, reprefented under the letter *c,* have a motion in the direction *c, a.* At the fame time, let another motion be communicated to it in the direction *c, d,* it will proceed in the diagonal *c, b,* and defcribe it in the fame time that it would have defcribed the fide, *c, a,* by the firft motion, or the fide, *c, d,* by the fecond. To underftand the demonftration of this corollary, we muft premife this obvious principle, that when a body is acted upon by a motion of power parallel to a right line given in pofition, this power, or motion, has no effect to caufe the body to approach towards that line, or recede from it, but to move in a line parallel to a right line only; as appears from the fecond law of motion: therefore, *c, a,* being parallel to *d, b*——'

His pupil having liftened to him thus far, could contain himfelf no longer, but interrupted the inveftigation with a loud laugh, and told him that his *poftulata* put him in mind of a certain learned and ingenious gentleman, who undertook to difprove the exiftence of natural evil, and afked no other *datum* on which to found his demonftration, but an acknowledgment that *every thing that is, is right.* 'You may, therefore,' faid he, in a peremptory tone, 'fpare yourfelf the trouble of torturing your invention; for, after all, I am pretty certain that I fhall want capacity to comprehend the difcuffion of your lemma, and confequently be obliged to refufe my affent to your deduction.'

Mr. Jolter was difconcerted at this declaration, and fo much offended at Peregrine's difrefpect, that he could not help expreffing his difpleafure, by telling him flatly, that he was too violent and headftrong to be reclaimed by reafon and gentle means; that he (the tutor) muft be obliged, in the difcharge of his duty and confcience, to inform the commodore of his pupil's imprudence; that if the laws of this realm were effectual, they would take cognizance of the gipfy who had led

him aſtray; and obſerved, by way of contraſt, that if ſuch a prepoſterous intrigue had happened in France, ſhe would have been clapped up in a convent two years ago.

Our lover's eyes kindled with indignation, when he heard his miſtreſs treated with ſuch irreverence; he could ſcarce refrain from inflicting manual chaſtiſement on the blaſphemer, whom he reproached in his wrath as an arrogant pedant, without either delicacy or ſenſe, and cautioned him againſt uſing any ſuch impertinent freedoms with his affairs for the future, on pain of incurring more ſevere effects of his reſentment.

Mr. Jolter, who entertained very high notions of that veneration to which he thought himſelf intitled by his character and qualifications, had not bore, without repining, his want of influence and authority over his pupil, againſt whom he cheriſhed a particular grudge, ever ſince the adventure of the painted eye; and therefore, on this occaſion, his politick forbearance had been overcome by the accumulated motives of his diſguſt. Indeed, he would have reſigned his charge with diſdain, had not he been encouraged to perſevere, by the hope of a good living which Trunnion had in his gift, or known how to diſpoſe of himſelf for the preſent to better advantage.

CHAP. XXV.

He receives a Letter from his Aunt, breaks with the Commodore, and diſobliges the Lieutenant, who nevertheleſs undertakes his Cauſe.

MEANWHILE he quitted the youth in high dudgeon, and that ſame evening diſpatched a letter for Mrs. Trunnion, which was dictated by the firſt tranſports of his paſſion, and of courſe replete with ſevere animadverſions on the miſconduct of his pupil.

In conſequence of this complaint, it was not long before Peregrine received an epiſtle from his aunt; wherein ſhe commemorated all the circumſtances of the commodore's benevolence towards him, when he was helpleſs and forlorn, deſerted and abandoned by his

own parents; upbraided him for his misbehaviour, and neglect of his tutor's advice; and insisted upon his breaking off all intercourse with that girl who had seduced his youth, as he valued the continuance of her affection and her husband's regard.

As our lover's own ideas of generosity were extremly refined, he was shocked at the indelicate insinuations of Mrs. Trunnion, and felt all the pangs of an ingenuous mind that labours under obligations to a person whom it contemns. Far from obeying her injunction, or humbling himself by a submissive answer to her reprehension, his resentment buoyed him up above every selfish consideration; he resolved to attach himself to Emilia, if possible, more than ever; and although he was tempted to punish the officiousness of Jolter, by recriminating upon his life and conversation, he generously withstood the impulse of his passion, because he knew that his governor had no other dependance than the good opinion of the commodore. He could not, however, digest in silence the severe expostulations of his aunt; to which he replied by the following letter, addressed to her husband.

'SIR,

'THOUGH my temper could never stoop 'to offer, nor, I believe your disposition deign to re'ceive, that gross incense which the illiberal only ex'pect, and none but the base-minded condescend to 'pay; my sentiments have already done justice to your 'generosity, and my intention scrupulously adhered to 'the dictates of my duty. Conscious of this integrity 'of heart, I cannot but severely feel your lady's un'kind (I will not call it ungenerous) recapitulation of 'the favours I have received; and as I take it for 'granted, that you knew and approved of her letter, I 'must beg leave to assure you, that far from being 'swayed by menaces and reproach, I am determined to 'embrace the most abject extremity of fortune, rather 'than submit to such dishonourable compulsion. When

'I am

'I am treated in a more delicate and reſpectful manner, 'I hope I ſhall behave as becomes, Sir, your obliged

'P. PICKLE.'

The commodore, who did not underſtand thoſe nice diſtinctions of behaviour, and dreaded the conſequence of Peregrine's amour, againſt which he was ſtrangely prepoſſeſſed, ſeemed exaſperated at the inſolence and obſtinacy of this adopted ſon; to whoſe epiſtle he wrote the following anſwer, which was tranſmitted by the hands of Hatchway, who had orders to bring the delinquent along with him to the garriſon.

'HARK YE, CHILD!

'YOU need not bring your fine ſpeeches to 'bear upon me. You only expend your ammunition 'to no purpoſe. Your aunt told you nothing but 'truth; for it is always fair and honourable to be 'above board, d'ye ſee. I am informed as how you 'are in chace of a painted galley, which will decoy 'you upon the flats of deſtruction, unleſs you keep a 'better loak-out, and a ſurer reckoning, than you have 'hitherto done; and I have ſent Jack Hatchway to ſee 'how the land lies, and warn you of your danger; if ſo 'be as you will put about ſhip, and let him ſteer you into 'this harbour, you ſhall meet with a ſafe birth and 'friendly reception; but if you refuſe to alter your 'courſe, you cannot expect any farther aſſiſtance from 'yours, as you behave,

'HAWSER TRUNNION.'

Peregrine was equally piqued and diſconcerted at the receipt of this letter, which was quite different from what he had expected; and declared in a reſolute tone to the lieutenant, who brought it, that he might return as ſoon as he pleaſed, for he was determined to conſult his own inclination, and remain for ſome time longer where he was.

Hatchway endeavoured to perſuade him by all the arguments which his ſagacity and friendſhip could ſupply, to ſhew a little more deference for the old man,

who was by this time rendered fretful and peevish by the gout, which now hindered him from enjoying himself as usual, and who might, in his passion, take some step very much to the detriment of the young gentleman, whom he had hitherto considered as his own son. Among other remonstrances, Jack observed, that mayhap Peregrine had got under Emilia's hatches, and did not chuse to set her adrift; and if that was the case, he himself would take charge of the vessel, and see her cargo safely delivered; for he had a respect for the young woman; and his needle pointed towards matrimony; and as, in all probability, she could not be much the worse for wear, he would make shift to scud through life with her under an easy sail.

Our lover was deaf to all his admonitions, and having thanked him for this last instance of his complaisance, repeated his resolution of adhering to his first purpose. Hatchway having profited so little by mild exhortations, assumed a more peremptory aspect, and plainly told him he neither could nor would go home without him; so he had best make immediate preparation for the voyage.

Peregrine made no other reply to this declaration, than by a contemptuous smile, and rose from his seat in order to retire; upon which the lieutenant started up, and posting himself by the door, protested with some menacing gestures, that he would not suffer him to run a-head neither. The other, incensed at his presumption in attempting to detain him by force, tripped up his wooden leg, and laid him on his back in a moment; then walked deliberately towards the park, in order to indulge his reflection, which at that time teemed with disagreeable thoughts. He had not proceeded two hundred steps, when he heard something blowing and stamping behind him; and looking back, perceived the lieutenant at his heels, with rage and indignation in his countenance. This exasperated seaman, impatient of the affront he had received, and forgetting all the circumstances of their former intimacy, advanced

with

with great eagerneſs to his old friend, ſaying, 'Look ye, brother, you're a ſaucy boy, and if you was at ſea, I would have your backſide brought to the davit for your diſobedience; but as we are on ſhore, you and I muſt crack a piſtol at one another; here is a brace, you ſhall take which you pleaſe.'

Peregrine, upon recollection, was ſorry for having been laid under the neceſſity of diſobliging honeſt Jack, and very frankly aſked his pardon for what he had done. But this condeſcenſion was miſinterpreted by the other, who refuſed any other ſatisfaction but that which an officer ought to claim; and, with ſome irreverend expreſſions, aſked if Perry was afraid of his bacon. The youth, inflamed at this unjuſt inſinuation, darted a ferocious look at the challenger, told him he had paid but too much regard to his infirmities, and bid him walk forward to the park, where he would ſoon convince him of his error, if he thought his conceſſion proceeded from fear.

About this time they were overtaken by Pipes, who having heard the lieutenant's fall, and ſeen him pocket his piſtols, ſuſpected that there was a quarrel in the caſe, and followed him with a view of protecting his maſter. Peregrine ſeeing him arrive, and gueſſing his intention, aſſumed an air of ſerenity, and pretending that he had left his handkerchief at the inn, ordered his man to go thither and fetch it to him in the park, where he would find them at his return. The command was twice repeated before Tom would take any other notice of the meſſage, except by ſhaking his head; but being urged with many threats and curſes to obedience, he gave them to underſtand that he knew their drift too well to truſt them by themſelves. 'As for you, Lieutenant Hatchway,' ſaid he, 'I have been your ſhip-mate, and know you to be a ſailor, that's enough; and as for maſter, I know him to be as good a man as every ſtept between ſtem and ſtern; whereby, if you have any thing to ſay to him, I am your man, as the ſaying is. Here's my ſapling, and I don't value your crackers of a rope's end.'

end.' This oration, the longeſt that ever Pipes was known to make, he concluded with a flouriſh of his cudgel, and enforced with ſuch determined refuſals to leave them, that they found it impoſſible to bring the cauſe to mortal arbitrement at that time, and ſtrolled about the park in profound ſilence; during which, Hatchway's indignation ſubſiding, he all of a ſudden thruſt out his hand as an advance to reconciliation, which being cordially ſhaken by Peregrine, a general pacification enſued; and was followed by a conſultation about the means of extricating the youth from his preſent perplexity. Had his diſpoſition been like that of moſt other young men, it would have been no difficult taſk to overcome his difficulties; but ſuch was the obſtinacy of his pride, that he deemed himſelf bound in honour to reſent the letters he had received; and inſtead of ſubmitting to the pleaſure of the commodore, expected an acknowledgment from him, without which he would liſten to no terms of accommodation. 'Had I been his own ſon,' ſaid he, 'I ſhould have bore his reproof, and ſued for forgiveneſs; but knowing myſelf to be on the footing of an orphan, who depends entirely upon his benevolence, I am jealous of every thing that can be conſtrued into diſreſpect, and inſiſt upon being treated with the moſt punctual regard. I ſhall now make application to my father, who is obliged to provide for me by the ties of nature, as well as the laws of the land; and if he ſhall refuſe to do me juſtice, I can never want employment while men are required for his majeſty's ſervice.'

The lieutenant, alarmed at this intimation, begged he would take no new ſtep until he ſhould hear from him; and that very evening ſet out for the garriſon, where he gave Trunnion an account of the miſcarriage of his negociation; told him how highly Peregrine was offended at the letter; communicated the young gentleman's ſentiments and reſolution; and finally aſſured him, that unleſs he ſhould think proper to aſk pardon

for the offence he had committed, he would, in all appearance, never more behold the face of his godſon.

The old commodore was utterly confounded at this piece of intelligence: he had expected all the humility of obedience and contrition from the young man; and inſtead of that, received nothing but the moſt indignant oppoſition; and even found himſelf in the circumſtances of an offender, obliged to make atonement, or forfeit all correſpondence with his favourite. Theſe inſolent conditions at firſt threw him into an agony of wrath, and he vented execrations with ſuch rapidity, that he left himſelf no time to breathe, and had almoſt been ſuffocated with his choler. He inveighed bitterly againſt the ingratitude of Peregrine, whom he mentioned with many opprobrious epithets, and ſwore that he ought to be keel-hauled for his preſumption; but when he began to reflect more coolly upon the ſpirit of the young gentleman, which had already manifeſted itſelf on many occaſions, and liſtened to the ſuggeſtions of Hatchway, whom he had always conſidered as an oracle in his way, his reſentment abated, and he determined to take Perry into favour again; this placability being not a little facilitated by Jack's narrative of our hero's intrepid behaviour at the aſſembly, as well as in the conteſt with him in the park. But ſtill this plaguy amour occurred like a bug-bear to his imagination; for he held it as an infallible maxim, that woman was an eternal ſource of miſery to man. Indeed, this apothegm he ſeldom repeated ſince his marriage, except in the company of a very few intimates, to whoſe ſecreſy and diſcretion he could truſt. Finding Jack himſelf at a nonplus in the affair of Emilia, he conſulted Mrs. Trunnion, who was equally ſurprized and offended, when ſhe underſtood that her letter did not produce the deſired effect; and after having imputed the youth's obſtinacy to his uncle's unſeaſonable indulgence, had recourſe to the advice of the parſon, who ſtill with an eye to his friend's advantage, counſelled them to ſend the young gentleman on his travels, in the

courſe

course of which he would, in all probability, forget the amusements of his greener years. The proposal was judicious, and immediately approved; when Trunnion going into his closet, after divers efforts, produced the following billet, with which Jack departed for Windsor that same afternoon.

'MY GOOD LAD,

'IF I gave offence in my last letter, I'm sorry 'for't, d'ye see; I thought it was the likeliest way to 'bring you up, but, in time to come, you shall have a 'large swing of cable. When you can spare time, I 'shall be glad if you will make a short trip, and see 'your aunt, and him who is your loving godfather and 'humble servant, HAWSER TRUNNION.'

'P. S. If you want money, you may draw upon me payable at sight.'

CHAP. XXVI.

He becomes melancholy and despondent; is favoured with a condescending Letter from his Uncle; reconciles himself to his Governor, and sets out with Emilia and her Friend for Mrs. Gauntlet's House.

PEREGRINE, fortified as he was with pride and indignation, did not fail to feel the smarting suggestions of his present situation: after having lived so long in an affluent and imperious manner, he could ill brook the thoughts of submitting to the mortifying exigencies of life. All the gaudy schemes of pomp and pleasure, which his luxuriant imagination had formed, began to dissolve; a train of melancholy ideas took possession of his thoughts, and the prospect of losing Emilia was not the least part of his affliction. Though he endeavoured to suppress the chagrin that preyed upon his heart, he could not conceal the disturbance of his mind from the penetration of that amiable young lady, who sympathized with him in her heart, though she could not give her tongue the liberty of asking the cause of his disorder: for, notwithstanding all the ardour of his addresses, he never could obtain from her the declaration of a mutual flame; because,

caufe, though he had hitherto treated her with the utmoft reverence of refpect, he had never once mentioned the final aim of his paffion. However honourable fhe fuppofed it to be, fhe had difcernment enough to forefee, that vanity or intereft co-operating with the levity of youth, might one day deprive her of her lover, and fhe was too proud to give him any handle of exulting at her expence. Although he was received by her with the moft diftinguifhed civility, and even an intimacy of friendfhip, all his folicitations could never extort from her an acknowledgment of love; on the contrary, being of a gay difpofition, fhe fometimes coquetted with other admirers, that his attention thus whetted might never abate, and that he might fee fhe had other refources, in cafe he fhould flag in his affection.

This being the prudential plan on which fhe acted, it cannot be fuppofed that fhe would condefcend to enquire into the ftate of his thoughts, when fhe faw him thus affected; but fhe, neverthelefs, impofed that tafk on her coufin and confidante, who, as they walked together in the park, obferved that he feemed to be out of humour. When this is the cafe, fuch a queftion generally increafes the difeafe; at leaft it had that effect upon Peregrine, who replied fomewhat peevifhly, 'I affure you, Madam, you never was more miftaken in your obfervations.'—'I think fo too,' faid Emilia, 'for I never faw Mr. Pickle in higher fpirits!' This ironical encomium compleated his confufion; he affected to fmile, but it was a fmile of anguifh, and in his heart he curfed the vivacity of both. He could not for his foul collect himfelf, fo as to utter one connected fentence; and the fufpicion that they obferved every circumftance of his behaviour, threw fuch a damp on his fpirits, that he was quite overwhelmed with fhame and refentment, when Sophy, cafting her eyes towards the gate, faid, 'Yonder is your fervant, Mr. Pickle, with another man who feems to have a wooden leg.' Peregrine ftarted at this intelligence, and immediately underwent fundry changes of complexion, knowing that

his fate, in a great meaſure, depended upon the information he would receive from his friend.

Hatchway advancing to the company, after a brace of ſea bows to the ladies, took the youth aſide, and put the commodore's letter into his hand; which threw him into ſuch an agitation, that he could ſcarce pronounce, 'Ladies, will you give me leave?' When, in conſequence of their permiſſion, he attempted to open the billet, he fumbled with ſuch manifeſt diſorder, that his miſtreſs, who watched his motions, began to think there was ſomething very intereſting in the meſſage; and ſo much was ſhe affected with his concern, that ſhe was fain to turn her head another way, and wipe the tears from her lovely eyes.

Meanwhile Peregrine no ſooner read the firſt ſentence than his countenance, which before was overcaſt with a deep gloom, began to be lighted up, and every feature, unbending by degrees, he recovered his ſerenity. Having peruſed the letter, his eyes ſparkling with joy and gratitude, he hugged the lieutenant in his arms, and preſented him to the ladies as one of his beſt friends. Jack met with a moſt gracious reception, and ſhook Emilia by the hand, telling her, with the familiar appellation of *old acquaintance*, that he did not care how ſoon he was maſter of ſuch another clean-going frigate as herſelf.

The whole company partook of this favourable change that evidently appeared in our lover's recollection, and enlivened his converſation with ſuch an uncommon flow of ſprightlineſs and good-humour, as even made an impreſſion on the iron countenance of Pipes himſelf, who actually ſmiled with ſatisfaction as he walked behind them.

The evening being pretty far advanced, they directed their courſe homeward; and while the valet attended Hatchway to the inn, Peregrine eſcorted the ladies to their lodging, where he owned the juſtneſs of Sophy's remark, in ſaying he was out of humour, and told them he had been extremely chagrined at a difference

which

which had happened between him and his uncle, to whom (by the letter which they had ſeen him receive) he now found himſelf happily reconciled.

Having received their congratulations, and declined ſtaying to ſup with them, on account of the longing deſire he had to converſe with his friend Jack, he took his leave, and repaired to the inn, where Hatchway informed him of every thing that had happened in the garriſon upon his repreſentations. Far from being diſguſted, he was perfectly well pleaſed with the proſpect of going abroad, which flattered his vanity and ambition, gratified his thirſt after knowledge, and indulged that turn for obſervation, for which he had been remarkable from his moſt tender years. Neither did he believe a ſhort abſence would tend to the prejudice of his love, but, on the contrary, enhance the value of his heart, becauſe he ſhould return better accompliſhed, and conſequently a more welcome offering to his miſtreſs. Elevated with theſe ſentiments, his heart dilated with joy, and the ſluices of his natural benevolence being opened by this happy turn of his affairs, he ſent his compliments to Mr. Jolter, to whom he had not ſpoken during a whole week, and deſired he would favour Mr. Hatchway and him with his company at ſupper.

The governor was not weak enough to decline this invitation; in conſequence of which he forthwith appeared, and was cordially welcomed by the relenting pupil, who expreſſed his ſorrow for the miſunderſtanding which had prevailed between them, and aſſured him that for the future he would avoid giving him any juſt cauſe of complaint. Jolter, who did not want affection, was melted by this acknowledgment, which he could not have expected, and earneſtly proteſted, that his chief ſtudy had always been, and ever ſhould be, to promote Mr. Pickle's intereſt and happineſs.

The beſt part of the night being ſpent in the circulation of a chearful glaſs, the company broke up; and next morning Peregrine went out with a view of making his miſtreſs acquainted with his uncle's intention of

ſending

ſending him out of the kingdom for his improvement, and of ſaying every thing which he thought neceſſary for the intereſt of his love. He found her at breakfaſt with her couſin: and as he was very full of the ſubject of his viſit, had ſcarce fixed himſelf in his ſeat, when he brought it on the carpet, by aſking with a ſmile, if the ladies had any commands for Paris. Emilia at this queſtion began to ſtare, and her confidante deſired to know who was going thither. He no ſooner gave them to underſtand, that he himſelf intended in a ſhort time to viſit that capital, than his miſtreſs with great precipitation wiſhed him a good journey, and affected to talk with indifference about the pleaſures he would enjoy in France: but when he ſeriouſly aſſured Sophy, who aſked if he was in earneſt, that his uncle actually inſiſted upon his making a ſhort tour, the tears guſhed in poor Emilia's eyes, and ſhe was at great pains to conceal her concern, by obſerving that the tea was ſo ſcalding hot, as to make her eyes water. This pretext was too thin to impoſe upon her lover, or even deceive the obſervation of her friend Sophy, who, after breakfaſt, took an opportunity of quitting the room.

Thus left by themſelves, Peregrine imparted to her what he had learned of the commodore's intention, without, however, mentioning a ſyllable of his being offended at their correſpondence; and accompanied his information with ſuch fervent vows of eternal conſtancy, and ſolemn promiſes of a ſpeedy return, that Emily's heart, which had been invaded by a ſuſpicion that this ſcheme of travelling was the effect of her lover's inconſtancy, began to be more at eaſe; and ſhe could not help ſignifying her approbation of his deſign.

This affair being amicably compromiſed, he aſked how ſoon ſhe propoſed to ſet out for her mother's houſe; and underſtanding that her departure was fixed for next day but one, and that her couſin Sophy intended to accompany her in her father's chariot, he repeated his intention of attending her. In the mean time he diſmiſſed his governor and the lieutenant to the garriſon,

son, with his compliments to his aunt and the commodore, and a faithful promise of his being with them in six days at farthest.

These previous measures being taken, he, attended by Pipes, set out with the ladies; and they had also a convoy for twelve miles from Sophy's father, who, at parting, recommended them piously to the care of Peregrine, with whom, by this time, he was perfectly well acquainted.

CHAP. XXVII.

They meet with a dreadful Alarm on the Road; arrive at their Journey's End. Peregrine is introduced to Emily's Brother; these two young Gentlemen misunderstand each other. Pickle departs for the Garrison.

AS they travelled at an easy rate, they had performed something more than one-half of their journey when they were benighted at an inn, at which they resolved to lodge; the accommodation was very good, they supped together with great mirth and enjoyment, and it was not till after he had been warned by the yawns of the ladies, that he conducted them to their apartment; where wishing them good night, he retired to his own, and went to rest.

The house was crouded with country people who had been at a neighbouring fair, and now regaled themselves with ale and tobacco in the yard; so that their consideration, which at any time was but slender, being now overwhelmed by this debauch, they staggered into their respective kennels, and left a lighted candle sticking to one of the wooden pillars that supported the gallery. The flame in a little time laid hold on the wood, which was as dry as tinder, and the whole gallery was on fire, when Peregrine suddenly waked, and found himself almost suffocated. He sprung up in an instant, slipped on his breeches, and throwing open the door of his chamber, saw the whole entry in a blaze.

Heavens! what were the emotions of his soul, when he beheld the volumes of flame and smoke rolling towards the room where his dear Emily lay! Regardless

of his own danger, he darted himſelf through the thickeſt of the gloom, when knocking hard, and calling at the ſame time to the ladies, with the moſt anxious entreaty to be admitted; the door was opened by Emilia in her ſhift, who aſked, with the utmoſt trepidation, what was the matter? He made no reply, but ſnatching her up in his arms, like another Æneas, bore her through the flames to a place of ſafety; where leaving her before ſhe could recollect herſelf, or pronounce one word, but, 'Alas! my couſin Sophy!' he flew back to the reſcue of that young lady, and found her already delivered by Pipes; who having been alarmed by the ſmell of fire, had got up, ruſhed immediately to the chamber where he knew theſe companions lodged, and (Emily being ſaved by her lover) brought off Miſs Sophy with the loſs of his own ſhock head of hair, which was ſinged off in his retreat.

By this time the whole inn was alarmed; every lodger, as well as ſervant, exerted himſelf, in order to ſtop the progreſs of this calamity; and there being a well-repleniſhed horſe-pond in the yard, in leſs than an hour the fire was totally extinguiſhed, without having done any other damage than of conſuming about two yards of the wooden gallery.

All this time our young gentleman cloſely attended his fair charge, each of whom had ſwooned with apprehenſion; but as their conſtitutions were good, and their ſpirits not eaſily diſſipated, when upon reflection they found themſelves and their company ſafe, and that the flames were happily quenched, the tumult of their fears ſubſided, they put on their cloaths, recovered their good humour, and began to rally each other on the trim in which they had been ſecured. Sophy obſerved, that now Mr. Pickle had an indiſputable claim to her couſin's affection; and therefore ſhe ought to lay aſide all affected reſerve for the future, and frankly avow the ſentiments of her heart. Emily retorted the argument, putting her in mind, that by the ſame claim Mr. Pipes was entitled to the like return from her. Her friend admitted

mitted the force of the conclusion, provided she could not find means of satisfying her deliverer in another shape; and turning to the valet, who happened to be present, asked if his heart was not otherwise engaged. Tom, who did not conceive the meaning of the question, stood silent according to custom; and the interrogation being repeated, answered with a grin—'Heart-whole as a biscuit, I'll assure you, mistress.'—'What?' said Emilia, 'have you never been in love, Thomas?'—'Yes, forsooth,' replied the valet without hesitation, 'sometimes of a morning.' Peregrine could not help laughing, and his mistress looked a little disconcerted at this blunt repartee; while Sophy slipping a purse into his hand, told him there was something to purchase a perriwig. Tom having consulted his master's eyes, refused the present, saying—'No, thank ye as much as if I did.'—And though she insisted upon his putting it in his pocket, as a small testimony of her gratitude, he could not be prevailed upon to avail himself of her generosity; but following her to the other end of the room, thrust it into her sleeve without ceremony, exclaiming—'I'll be damned to hell if I do!' Peregrine having checked him for his boorish behaviour, sent him out of the room, and begged that Miss Sophy would not endeavour to debauch the morals of his servant; who, rough and uncultivated as he was, had sense enough to perceive that he had no pretension to any such acknowledgment. But she argued with great vehemence, that she should never be able to make an acknowledgment adequate to the service he had done her, and that she should never be perfectly easy in her own mind, until she found some opportunity of manifesting the sense she had of the obligation. 'I do not pretend,' said she, 'to reward Mr. Pipes; but I shall be absolutely unhappy, unless I am allowed to give him some token of my regard.'

Peregrine, thus earnestly solicited, desired, that since she was bent upon displaying her generosity, she would not bestow upon him any pecuniary gratification, but

honour him with ſome trinket, as a mark of conſideration; becauſe he himſelf had ſuch a particular value for the fellow, on account of his attachment and fidelity, that he ſhould be ſorry to ſee him treated on the footing of a common mercenary domeſtick.

There was not one jewel in the poſſeſſion of this grateful young lady, that ſhe would not have gladly given as a recompence, or badge of diſtinction to her reſcuer; but his maſter pitched upon a ſeal ring of no great value that hung at her watch, and Pipes being called in, had permiſſion to accept that teſtimony of Miſs Sophy's favour. Tom received it accordingly with ſundry ſcrapes, and having kiſſed it with great devotion, put it on his little finger, and ſtrutted off, extremely proud of his acquiſition.

Emilia, with a moſt enchanting ſweetneſs of aſpect, told her lover, that he had inſtructed her how to behave towards him; and taking a diamond ring from her finger, deſired he would wear it for her ſake. He received the pledge as became him, and preſented another in exchange, which ſhe at firſt refuſed, alledging that it would deſtroy the intent of her acknowledgment; but Peregrine aſſured her, he had accepted her jewel, not as a proof of her gratitude, but as the mark of her love; and that if ſhe refuſed a mutual token, he ſhould look upon himſelf as the object of her diſdain. Her eyes kindled, and her cheeks glowed with reſentment at this impudent intimation, which ſhe conſidered as an unſeaſonable inſult; and the young gentleman perceiving her emotion, ſtood corrected for his temerity, and aſked pardon for the liberty of his remonſtrance, which he hoped ſhe would aſcribe to the prevalence of that principle alone which he had always taken pride in avowing.

Sophy ſeeing him diſconcerted, interpoſed in his behalf, and chid her couſin for having practiſed ſuch unneceſſary affectation; upon which Emilia, ſoftened into compliance, held out her finger as a ſignal of her condeſcenſion. Peregrine put on the ring with great eagerneſs, mumbled her ſoft white hand in an extaſy which

would

would not allow him to confine his embraces to that limb, but urged him to ſeize her by the waiſt, and ſnatch a delicious kiſs from her lovely pouting lips; nor would he leave her a butt to the ridicule of Sophy, on whoſe mouth he inſtantly committed a rape of the ſame nature; ſo that the two friends, countenanced by each other, reprehended him with ſuch gentleneſs of rebuke, that he was almoſt tempted to repeat the offence.

The morning being now lighted up, and the ſervants of the inn on foot, he ordered ſome chocolate for breakfaſt, and at the deſire of the ladies, ſent Pipes to ſee the horſes fed, and the chariot prepared, while he went to the bar, and diſcharged the bill.

Theſe meaſures being taken, they ſet out about five o'clock, and having refreſhed themſelves and their cattle at another inn on the road, proceeded in the afternoon. Without meeting with any other accident, they ſafely arrived at the place of their deſtination; where Mrs. Gauntlet expreſſed her joy at ſeeing her old friend Mr. Pickle, whom, however, ſhe kindly reproached for the long diſcontinuance of his regard. Without explaining the cauſe of that interruption, he proteſted that his love and eſteem had never been diſcontinued, and that for the future he ſhould omit no occaſion of teſtifying how much he had her friendſhip at heart. She then made him acquainted with her ſon, who at that time was in the houſe, being excuſed from his duty by furlough.

This young man, whoſe name was Godfrey, was about the age of twenty, of a middling ſize, vigorous make, remarkably well ſhaped, and the ſcars of the ſmall-pox, of which he bore a good number, added a peculiar manlineſs to the air of his countenance. His capacity was good, and his diſpoſition naturally frank and eaſy; but he had been a ſoldier from his infancy, and his education was altogether in the military ſtyle. He looked upon taſte and letters as mere pedantry, beneath the conſideration of a gentleman, and every civil ſtation of life as mean, when compared with the profeſſion of arms. He had made great progreſs in the gym-

nastick sciences of dancing, fencing, and riding; played perfectly well on the German flute; and, above all things, valued himself upon a scrupulous observance of all the points of honour.

Had Peregrine and he considered themselves upon equal footing, in all probability they would have immediately entered into a league of intimacy and friendship; but this sufficient soldier looked upon his sister's admirer as a young student raw from the university, and utterly ignorant of mankind; while Squire Pickle beheld Godfrey in the light of a needy volunteer, greatly inferior to himself in fortune, as well as every other accomplishment. This mutual misunderstanding could not fail of producing animosities. The very next day after Peregrine's arrival, some sharp repartees passed between them in presence of the ladies, before whom each endeavoured to assert his own superiority. In these contests, our hero never failed of obtaining the victory, because his genius was more acute, and his talents better cultivated than those of his antagonist, who therefore took umbrage at his success, became jealous of his reputation, and began to treat him with marks of scorn and disrespect.

His sister saw, and dreading the consequence of his ferocity, not only took him to task in private for his impolite behaviour, but also intreated her lover to make allowances for the roughness of her brother's education. He kindly assured her, that whatever pains it might cost him to vanquish his own impetuous temper, he would for her sake endure all the mortifications to which her brother's arrogance might expose him; and after having stayed with her two days, and enjoyed several private interviews, during which he acted the part of a most passionate lover, he took his leave of Mrs. Gauntlet over-night, and told the young ladies he would call early next morning to bid them farewel. He did not neglect this piece of duty, and found the two friends at breakfast already prepared in the parlour. All three being extremely affected with the thoughts of

parting,

parting, a most pathetick silence for some time prevailed, till Peregrine put an end to it, by lamenting his fate, in being obliged to exile himself so long from the dear object of his most interesting wish. He begged with the most earnest supplications, that she would now, in consideration of the cruel absence he must suffer, give him the consolation which she had hitherto refused; namely, that of knowing he possessed a place within her heart. The confidante seconded his request, representing that it was now no time to disguise her sentiments, when her lover was about to leave the kingdom, and might be in danger of contracting other connections, unless he was confirmed in his constancy, by knowing how far he could depend upon her love; and, in short, she was plied with such irresistible importunities, that she answered in the utmost confusion, 'Though I have avoided literal acknowledgments, methinks the circumstances of my behaviour might have convinced Mr. Pickle, that I do not regard him as a common acquaintance.'—'My charming Emily!' cried the impatient lover, throwing himself at her feet, 'why will you deal out my happiness in such scanty portions? Why will you thus mince the declaration which would overwhelm me with pleasure, and chear my lonely reflection, while I sigh amid the solitude of separation?' His fair mistress, melted by this image, replied, with the tears gushing from her eyes, 'I'm afraid I shall feel that separation more severely than you imagine.' Transported at this flattering confession, he pressed her to his breast, and while her head reclined upon his neck, mingled his tears with her's in great abundance, breathing the most tender vows of eternal fidelity. The gentle heart of Sophy could not bear this scene unmoved; she wept with sympathy, and encouraged the lovers to resign themselves to the will of fate, and support their spirits with the hope of meeting again on happier terms. Finally, after mutual promises, exhortations and endearments, Peregrine took his leave, his heart being so full that he could scarce pronounce the word, *Adieu!*

and

and mounting his horse at the door, set out with Pipes for the garrison.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Peregrine is overtaken by Mr. Gauntlet, with whom he fights a Duel, and contracts an intimate Friendship. He arrives at the Garrison, and finds his Mother as implacable as ever. He is insulted by his Brother Gam, whose Preceptor he disciplines with a Horse-whip.

IN order to expel the melancholy images that took possession of his fancy, at parting from his mistress, he called in the flattering ideas of those pleasures he expected to enjoy in France: and before he had rode ten miles, his imagination was effectually amused.

While he thus prosecuted his travels by anticipation, and indulged himself in all the insolence of hope, at the turning of a lane he was of a sudden overtaken by Emilia's brother on horseback, who told him he was riding the same way, and should be glad of his company.

This young gentleman, whether prompted by personal pique, or actuated with zeal for the honour of his family, had followed our hero, with a view of obliging him to explain the nature of his attachment to his sister. Peregrine returned his compliment with such disdainful civility, as gave him room to believe that he suspected his errand; and therefore, without farther preamble, he declared his business in these words: 'Mr. Pickle, you have carried on a correspondence with my sister for some time, and I should be glad to know the nature of it.' To this question our lover replied, 'Sir, I should be glad to know what title you have to demand that satisfaction?'—'Sir,' answered the other, 'I demand it in the capacity of a brother, jealous of his own honour, as well as of his sister's reputation; and if your intentions are honourable, you will not refuse it.'—'Sir,' said Peregrine, I am not at present disposed to appeal to your opinion for the rectitude of my intentions; and I think you assume a little too much importance, in pretending to judge my conduct.'

duct.'—'Sir,' replied the soldier, 'I pretend to judge the conduct of every man who interferes with my concerns, and even to chastise him, if I think he acts amiss.'—'Chastise!' cried the youth, with indignation in his looks; 'sure you dare not apply that term to me?'—'You are mistaken,' said Godfrey, 'I dare do any thing that becomes the character of a gentleman.' —'Gentleman, God wot!' replied the other, looking contemptuously at his equipage, which was none of the most superb; 'a very pretty gentleman, truly!' The soldier's wrath was inflamed by this ironical repetition, the contempt of which his conscious poverty made him feel; and he called his antagonist presumptuous boy, insolent upstart, with other epithets, which Perry retorted with great bitterness. A formal challenge having passed between them, they alighted at the first inn, and walked into the next field, in order to decide their quarrel by the sword. Having pitched upon the spot, helped to pull off each other's boots, and laid aside their coats and waistcoats, Mr. Gauntlet told his opponent, that he himself was looked upon in the army as an expert swordsman, and that if Mr. Pickle had not made that science his particular study, they should be upon a more equal footing in using pistols. Peregrine was too much incensed to thank him for his plain dealing, and too confident of his own skill to relish the other proposal, which he accordingly rejected: then drawing his sword, he observed, that were he to treat Mr. Gauntlet according to his deserts, he would order his man to punish his audacity with a horse-whip. Exasperated at this expression, which he considered as an indelible affront, he made no reply, but attacked his adversary with equal ferocity and address. The youth parried his first and second thrust, but received the third in the outside of his sword-arm. Though the wound was superficial, he was transported with rage at the sight of his own blood, and returned the assault with such fury and precipitation, that Gauntlet, loth to take advantage of his unguarded heat, stood upon the defensive. In the second

cond longe, Peregrine's weapon entering a kind of net-work in the ſhell of Godfrey's ſword, the blade ſnapped in two, and left him at the mercy of the ſoldier; who, far from making an inſolent uſe of the victory he had gained, put up his Toledo with great deliberation, like a man who had been uſed to that kind of rencounters, obſerving that ſuch a blade as Peregrine's was not to be truſted with a man's life: then adviſing the owner to treat a gentleman in diſtreſs with more reſpect for the future, he ſlipped on his boots, and with ſullen dignity of demeanour ſtalked back to the inn.

Though Pickle was extremely mortified at his miſcarriage in this adventure, he was alſo ſtruck with the behaviour of his antagoniſt; which affected him the more, as he underſtood that Godfrey's *fierté* had proceeded from the jealous ſenſibility of a gentleman declined into the vale of misfortune. Gauntlet's valour and moderation induced him to put a favourable conſtruction on all thoſe circumſtances of that young ſoldier's conduct, which before had given him diſguſt. Though in any other caſe he would have induſtriouſly avoided the leaſt appearance of ſubmiſſion, he followed his conqueror to the inn, with a view of thanking him for his generous forbearance, and of ſoliciting his friendſhip and correſpondence.

Godfrey had his foot in the ſtirrup to mount, when Peregrine coming up to him, deſired he would defer his departure for a quarter of an hour, and favour him with a little private converſation. The ſoldier, who miſtook the meaning of the requeſt, immediately quitted his horſe, and followed Pickle into a chamber, where he expected to find a brace of piſtols loaded on the table; but he was very agreeably deceived, when our hero, in the moſt reſpectful terms, acknowledged his noble deportment in the field, owned that till then he had miſunderſtood his character, and begged that he would honour him with his intimacy and correſpondence.

Gauntlet, who had ſeen undoubted proofs of Peregrine's courage, which had conſiderably raiſed him in his

his esteem, and had sense enough to perceive that this concession was not owing to any sordid or sinister motive, embraced his offer with demonstrations of infinite satisfaction. When he understood the terms on which Mr. Pickle was with his sister, he proffered his service in his turn, either as an agent, mediator, or confidante: nay, to give this new friend a convincing proof of his sincerity, he disclosed to him a passion which he had for some time entertained for his cousin, Miss Sophy, though he durst not reveal his sentiments to her father, lest he should be offended at his presumption, and withdraw his protection from the family.

Peregrine's generous heart was wrung with anguish, when he understood that this young gentleman, who was the only son of a distinguished officer, had carried arms for the space of five years, without being able to obtain a subaltern's commission, though he had always behaved with remarkable regularity and spirit, and acquired the friendship and esteem of all the officers under whom he had served.

He would, at that time, with the utmost pleasure, have shared his finances with him; but as he would not run the risk of offending the young soldier's delicacy of honour, by a premature exertion of his liberality, he resolved to insinuate himself into an intimacy with him, before he would venture to take such freedoms; and with that view pressed Mr. Gauntlet to accompany him to the garrison, where he did not doubt of having influence enough to make him a welcome guest. Godfrey thanked him very courteously for his invitation, which he said he could not immediately accept, but promised if he would favour him with a letter, and fix the time at which he proposed to set out for France, he would endeavour to visit him at the commodore's habitation, and from thence give him a convoy to Dover. This new treaty being settled, and a dossil of lint, with a snip of plaster, applied to our adventurer's wound, he parted from the brother of his dear Emilia, to whom, and his friend Sophy, he sent his kindest wishes; and

having

having lodged one night upon the road, arrived next day in the afternoon at the garrison, where he found all his friends in good health, and overjoyed at his return.

The commodore, who was by this time turned of seventy, and altogether crippled by the gout, seldom went abroad; and as his conversation was not very entertaining, had but little company within doors; so that his spirits must have quite stagnated, had they not been kept in motion by the conversation of Hatchway, and received at different times a wholesome fillip from the discipline of his spouse, who, by the force of pride, religion, and Coniac, had erected a most terrible tyranny in the house. There was such a quick circulation of domesticks in the family, that every suit of livery had been worn by figures of all dimensions: Trunnion himself had long before this time yielded to the torrent of her arbitrary sway; though not without divers obstinate efforts to maintain his liberty; and now, that he was disabled by his infirmities, when he used to hear his empress singing the loud Orthyan song among the servants below, he would often in whispers communicate to the lieutenant hints of what he would do, if so be as how he was not deprived of the use of his precious limbs. Hatchway was the only person whom the temper of Mrs. Trunnion respected, either because she dreaded his ridicule, or looked upon his person with eyes of affection. This being the situation of things in the garrison, it is not to be doubted that the old gentleman highly enjoyed the presence of Peregrine, who found means to ingratiate himself so effectually with his aunt, that while he remained at home, she seemed to have exchanged the disposition of a tigress for that of a gentle kid: but he found his own mother as implacable, and his father as much henpecked, as ever.

Gamaliel, who now very seldom enjoyed the conversation of his old friend the commodore, had some time ago entered into an amicable society, consisting of the

barber,

barber, apothecary, attorney, and exciseman of the parish, among whom he used to spend the evening at Tunley's, and listen to their disputes upon philosophy and politicks, with great comfort and edification, while his sovereign lady domineered at home as usual, visited with great pomp in the neighbourhood, and employed her chief care in the education of her darling son Gam, who was now in the fifteenth year of his age, and so remarkable for his perverse disposition, that in spite of his mother's influence and authority, he was not only hated, but also despised, both at home and abroad. She had put him under the tuition of the curate, who lived in the family, and was obliged to attend him in all his exercises and excursions. This governor was a low-bred fellow, who had neither experience nor ingenuity, but possessed a large fund of adulation and servile complaisance, by which he had gained the good graces of Mrs. Pickle, and presided over all her deliberations in the same manner as his superior managed those of Mrs. Trunnion.

He had one day rode out to take an airing with his pupil, who, as I have already observed, was odious to the poor people, for having killed their dogs and broken their inclosures, and on account of his hump, distinguished by the title of *my Lord*; when in a narrow lane they chanced to meet Peregrine on horseback.

The young squire no sooner perceived his elder brother, for whom he had been instructed to entertain the most inveterate grudge, than he resolved to insult him *en passant*, and actually rode against him full gallop. Our hero guessing his aim, fixed himself in his stirrups, and by a deterous management of the reins, avoided the shock in such a manner, as that their legs only should encounter, by which means my lord was tilted out of his saddle, and in a twinkling laid sprawling in the dirt. The governor, enraged at the disgrace of his charge, advanced with great insolence and fury, and struck at Peregrine with his whip. Nothing could be more agreeable to our young gentleman than this as-

fault, which furnished him with an opportunity of chastising an officious wretch, whose petulance and malice he had longed to punish. He therefore, spurring up his horse towards his antagonist, overthrew him in the middle of a hedge. Before he had time to recollect himself from the confusion of the fall, Pickle alighted in a trice, and exercised his horse-whip with such agility about the curate's face and ears, that he was fain to prostrate himself before his enraged conqueror, and implore his forbearance in the most abject terms. While Peregrine was thus employed, his brother Gam had made shift to rise and attack him in the rear; for which reason, when the tutor was quelled, the victor faced about, snatched the weapon out of his hand, and having broken it to pieces, remounted his horse, and rode off, without deigning to honour him with any other notice.

The condition in which they returned produced infinite clamour against the conqueror, who was represented as a ruffian who had lain in ambush to make away with his brother, in whose defence the curate was said to have received those cruel stripes, that hindered him from appearing for three whole weeks in the performance of his duty at church.

Complaints were made to the commodore, who having inquired into the circumstances of the affair, approved of what his nephew had done; adding, with many oaths, that, provided Peregrine had been out of the scrape, he wished Crook-back had broke his neck in the fall.

CHAP. XXIX.

He projects a Plan of Revenge, which is executed against the Curate.

OUR hero, exasperated at the villainy of the curate, in the treacherous misrepresentation he had made of this rencounter, determined to practise upon him a method of revenge, which should be not only effectual, but also unattended with any bad consequence to himself. For this purpose he and Hatchway, to whom he imparted his plan, went to the alehouse one evening, and

and called for an empty room, knowing there was no other but that which they had chofen for the fcene of action. This apartment was a fort of a parlour that fronted the kitchen, with a window towards the yard; where, after they had fat fome time, the lieutenant found means to amufe the landlord in difcourfe, while Peregrine, ftepping out into the yard, by the talent of mimickry, which he poffeffed in a furprizing degree, counterfeited a dialogue between the curate and Tunley's wife. This reaching the ears of the publican, for whofe hearing it was calculated, inflamed his naturally jealous difpofition to fuch a degree, that he could not conceal his emotion, but made an hundred efforts to quit the room; while the lieutenant, fmoaking his pipe with great gravity, as if he neither heard what paffed, nor took notice of the landlord's diforder, detained him on the fpot by a fucceffion of queftions which he could not refufe to anfwer; though he ftood fweating with agony all the time, ftretching his neck every inftant towards the window through which the voices were conveyed, fcratching his head, and exhibiting fundry other fymptoms of impatience and agitation. At length, the fuppofed converfation came to fuch a pitch of amorous complaifance, that the hufband, quite frantick with his imaginary difgrace, rufhed out at the door, crying, 'Coming, Sir!' But as he was obliged to make a circuit round one half of the houfe, Peregrine had got in by the window, before Tunley arrived in the yard.

According to the feigned intelligence he had received, he ran directly to the barn, in expectation of making fome very extraordinary difcovery; and having employed fome minutes in rummaging the ftraw to no purpofe, returned in a ftate of diftraction to the kitchen, juft as his wife chanced to enter at the other door. The circumftance of her appearance confirmed him in the opinion that the deed was done. As the difeafe of being hen-pecked was epidemick in the parifh, he durft not exprefs the leaft hint of his uneafinefs to her, but refolved to take vengeance on the libidinous prieft,

who, he imagined, had corrupted the chastity of his spouse.

The two confederates, in order to be certified that their scheme had taken effect, as well as to blow up the flame which they had kindled, called for Tunley, in whose countenance they could easily discern his confusion. Peregrine desired him to sit down and drink a glass with them, began to interrogate him about his family, and among other things, asked him how long he had been married to that handsome wife. This question, which was put with an arch significance of look, alarmed the publican, who began to fear that Pickle had overheard his dishonour; and this suspicion was not at all removed, when the lieutenant, with a sly regard, pronounced, 'Tunley, wan't you noosed by the curate?'—'Yes, I was!' replied the landlord, with an eagerness and perplexity of tone, as if he thought the lieutenant knew, that *thereby hung a tale*; and Hatchway supported this suspicion, by answering, 'Nay, as for that matter, the curate may be a very sufficient man in his way.' This transition from his wife to the curate, convinced him that his shame was known to his guests; and in the transport of his indignation, he pronounced with great emphasis, 'A sufficient man! Odds heart! I believe they are all wolves in sheep's cloathing. I wish to God I could see the day, master, when there shall not be a priest, an exciseman, or a custom-house officer, in this kingdom. As for that fellow of a curate, if I do catch him—It don't signify talking—But, by the Lord!—Gentlemen, my service to you.'

The associates being satisfied by these abrupt insinuations, that they had so far succeeded in their aim, waited with impatience two or three days in expectation of hearing that Tunley had fallen upon some method of being revenged for this imaginary wrong; but finding that either his invention was too shallow, or his inclination too languid, to gratify their desire of his own accord, they determined to bring the affair to such a cri-

sis,

he ſhould not be able to withſtand the opportunity of executing his vengeance. With this view, one evening hired a boy to run to Mr. Pickle's [illegible], and tell the curate, that Mrs. Tunley being taken [illegible] ſuddenly ill, her huſband deſired he would come immediately and pray with her. Meanwhile, they had taken poſſeſſion of a room in the houſe; and Hatchway engaging the landlord in converſation, Peregrine, in his return from the yard, obſerved, as if by accident, that the parſon was gone into the kitchen, in order, as he ſuppoſed, to catechize Tunley's wife.

The publican ſtarted at this intelligence, and under pretence of ſerving another company in the next room, went out to the barn, where arming himſelf with a flail, he repaired to a lane through which the curate was under a neceſſity of paſſing in his way home. There he lay in ambuſh, with fell intent; and when the ſuppoſed author of his ſhame arrived, greeted him in the dark with ſuch a ſalutation, as forced him to ſtagger backward three paces at leaſt. If the ſecond application had taken effect, in all probability that ſpot would have been the boundary of the parſon's mortal peregrination; but, luckily for him, his antagoniſt was not expert in the management of his weapon, which by a twiſt of the thong that connected the legs, inſtead of pitching upon the head of the aſtoniſhed curate, deſcended in an oblique direction on his own pate, with ſuch a ſwing, that the ſkull actually rung like an apothecary's mortar, and ten thouſand lights ſeemed to dance before his eyes. The curate recollecting himſelf during the reſpite he obtained from this accident, and believing his aggreſſor to be ſome thief who lurked in that place for prey, reſolved to make a running fight, until he ſhould arrive within cry of his habitation. With this deſign he raiſed up his cudgel for the defence of his head, and betaking himſelf to his heels, began to roar for help with the lungs of a Stentor. Tunley throwing away the flail, which he durſt no longer truſt with the execution of his revenge, purſued the fugitive with all the ſpeed he could exert;

and the other, either unnerved by fear, or ft[illegible] of his over a ftone, was overtaken before he had run a[illegible] dred paces. He no fooner felt the wind of the publican's fift that whiftled round his ears, than he fell the upon the earth at full length, and the cudgel flew from his unclafping hand; when Tunley, fpringing like a tiger upon his back, rained fuch a fhower of blows upon his carcafe, that he imagined himfelf under the difcipline of ten pair of fifts at leaft; yet the imaginary cuckold, not fatisfied with annoying the prieft in this manner, laid hold on one of his ears with his teeth, and bit fo unmercifully, that the curate was found almoft entranced with pain by two labourers, at whofe approach the affailant retreated unperceived.

The lieutenant had pofted himfelf at the window, in order to fee the landlord at his firft return; and no fooner perceived him enter the yard, than he called him into the apartment, impatient to learn the effects of their ftratagem. Tunley obeyed the fummons, and appeared before his guefts in all the violence of rage, diforder, and fatigue; his noftrils were dilated more than one-half beyond their natural capacity, his eyes rolled, his teeth chattered, he fnored in breathing as if he had been oppreffed by the night-mare, and ftreams of fweat flowed down each fide of his forehead.

Peregrine affecting to ftart at the approach of fuch an uncouth figure, afked if he had been wreftling with a fpirit; upon which he anfwered with great vehemence, 'Spirit! No, no, mafter, I have had a roll and tumble with the flefh.—A dog! I'll teach him to come caterwauling about my doors!' Gueffing from this reply, that his aim was accomplifhed, and curious to know the particulars of the rencounter, 'Well, then,' faid the youth, 'I hope you have prevailed againft the flefh, Tunley?'—'Yes, yes, anfwered the publican, 'I have cooled his capiffens, as the faying is: I have played fuch a tune about his ears, that I'll be bound he fhan't long for mufick this month. A goatifh, ram-

rafcal! Why, he's a perfect parifh bull, as I [illegible] to live.'

[illegible] by obferving that he feemed to have made a [illegible] battle, defired he would fit down and recover [illegible]; and after he had fwallowed a brace of bumpers, his vanity prompted him to expatiate upon his own exploit in fuch a manner, that the confederates, without feeming to know the curate was his antagonift, became acquainted with every circumftance of the ambufcade.

Tunley had fcarce got the better of his agitation, when his wife entering the room, told them by way of news, that fome waggifh body had fent Mr. Sackbut the curate to pray with her. This name inflamed the hufband's choler anew, and forgetting all his complaifance for his fpoufe, he replied with a rancorous grin, 'Add rabbit him! I doubt not but you found his admonitions deadly comfortable!' The landlady looking at her vaffal with a fovereign afpect, 'What crotchets,' faid fhe, 'have you got in your fool's head, I trow? I know no bufinefs you have to fit here like a gentleman with your arms a kimbo, when there's another company in the houfe to be ferved.' The fubmiffive hufband took the hint, and, without farther expoftulation, fneaked out of the room.

Next day it was reported, that Mr. Sackbut had been way-laid, and almoft murdered by robbers, and an advertifement was pafted upon the church-door, offering a reward to any perfon that fhould difcover the affaffin; but he reaped no fatisfaction from this expedient, and was confined to his chamber a whole fortnight by the bruifes he had received.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXX.

Mr. Sackbut and his Pupil conspire against Peregr[ine], who being apprized of their Design by his Sist[er], takes Measures for counterworking their Scheme, which is executed by Mistake upon Mr. Gauntlet. This young Soldier meets with a cordial Reception from the Commodore, who generously decoys him into his own Interest.

WHEN he considered the circumstances of the ambuscade, he could not persuade himself that he had been assaulted by a common thief, because it was not to be supposed that a robber would have amused himself in pummelling rather than in rifling his prey; he therefore ascribed his misfortune to the secret enmity of some person who had a design upon his life; and upon mature deliberation, fixed his suspicion upon Peregrine, who was the only man on earth from whom he thought he deserved such treatment. He communicated his conjecture to his pupil, who readily adopted his opinion, and advised him strenuously to revenge the wrong by a like contrivance, without seeking to make a narrower inquiry, lest his enemy should be thereby put upon his guard.

This proposal being relished, they in concert resolved the means of retorting the ambush with interest, and actually laid such a villainous plan for attacking our hero in the dark, that, had it been executed according to their intention, the young gentleman's scheme of travelling would have been effectually marred. But their machinations were overheard by Miss Pickle, who was now in the seventeenth year of her age, and, in spite of the prejudice of education, entertained in secret a most sisterly affection for her brother Perry, though she had never spoke to him, and was deterred by the precepts, vigilance, and menaces of her mother, from attempting any means of meeting him in private. She was not, however, insensible to his praise, which was loudly sounded forth in the neighbourhood, and never failed of

going

went to church, and every other place where she thought she might have opportunity of feeing this amiable brother. With thefe fentiments it cannot be fuppofed that fhe would hear the confpiracy without emotion. She was fhocked at the treacherous barbarity of Gam, and fhuddered at the profpect of the danger to which Peregrine would be expofed from their malice. She durft not communicate this plot to her mother, becaufe fhe was afraid that lady's unaccountable averfion for her firft-born would hinder her from interpofing in his behalf, and confequently render her a fort of accomplice in the guilt of his affaffins. She therefore refolved to warn Peregrine of the confpiracy, an account of which fhe tranfmitted to him in an affectionate letter, by means of a young gentleman in that neighbourhood, who made his addreffes to her at that time, and who, at her requeft, offered his fervice to our hero, in defeating the projects of his adverfaries.

Peregrine was ftartled when he read the particulars of their fcheme; which was no other than an intention to fally upon him when he fhould be altogether unprovided againft fuch an attack, cut off his ears, and otherwife mutilate him, in fuch a manner that he fhould have no caufe to be vain of his perfon for the future.

Incenfed as he was againft the brutal difpofition of his own father's fon, he could not help being moved at the integrity and tendernefs of his fifter, of whofe inclinations towards him he had been hitherto kept in ignorance. He thanked the gentleman for his honourable dealing, and expreffed a defire of being better acquainted with his virtues; told him, that now he was cautioned, he hoped there would be no neceffity for giving him any farther trouble, and wrote by him a letter of acknowledgment to his fifter, for whom he expreffed the utmoft love and regard, befeeching her to favour him with an interview before his departure, that he might indulge his fraternal fondnefs, and be bleffed with the company and countenance of one at leaft belonging to his own family.

Having

Having imparted this diſcovery to his friend H[illegible] way, they came to a reſolution of countermining [illegible] plan of their enemies. As they did not chuſe to ex[illegible] themſelves to the inſinuations of ſlander, which w[illegible] have exerted itſelf at their expence, had they, even [illegible] defending themſelves, employed any harſh means of retaliation, they invented a method of diſappointing and diſgracing their foes, and immediately ſet Pipes at work to forward the preparations.

Miſs Pickle having deſcribed the ſpot which the aſſaſſins had pitched upon for the ſcene of their vengeance; our triumvirate intended to have placed a centinel among the corn, who ſhould come and give them intelligence when the ambuſcade was laid; and in conſequence of that information, they would ſteal ſoftly towards the place, attended by three or four of the domeſticks, and draw a large net over the conſpirators, who being entangled in the toil, ſhould be diſarmed fettered, heartily ſcourged, and ſuſpended between two trees in the ſnare, as a ſpectacle to all paſſengers that ſhould chance to travel that way.

The plan being thus digeſted, and the commodore made acquainted with the whole affair, the ſpy was ſent upon duty, and every body within doors prepared to go forth upon the firſt notice. One whole evening did they ſpend in the moſt impatient expectation: but on the ſecond the ſcout crept into the garriſon, and aſſured them, that he had perceived three men ſkulking behind the hedge, on the road that led to the publick houſe from which Peregrine and the lieutenant uſed every night to return about that hour. Upon this intelligence, the confederates ſet out immediately with all their implements. Approaching the ſcene with as little noiſe as poſſible, they heard the ſound of blows; and though the night was dark, perceived a ſort of tumultuous conflict on the very ſpot which the conſpirators had poſſeſſed. Surprized at this occurrence, the meaning of which he could not comprehend, Peregrine ordered his myrmidons to halt and reconnoitre; and immediately

his

[illegible] were faluted with an exclamation of, 'You '[illegible] me, rafcal!' The voice being quite fa-[illegible] he all at once divined the caufe of that [illegible] they had obferved; and running up to [illegible] of the exclaimer, found a fellow on his [illegible]ng his life of Mr. Gauntlet, who ftood [illegible] with a naked hanger in his hand.

Pickle inftantly made himfelf known to his friend; who told him, that having left his horfe at Tunley's, he was in his way to the garrifon fet upon by three ruffians, one of whom, being the very individual perfon now in his power, had come behind him, and ftruck with a bludgeon at his head, which, however, he miffed, and the inftrument defcended on his left fhoulder; that upon drawing his hanger, and laying about him in the dark, the other two fled, leaving their companion, whom he had difabled, in the lurch.

Peregrine congratulated him upon his fafety, and having ordered Pipes to fecure the prifoner, conducted Mr. Gauntlet to the garrifon, where he met with a very hearty reception from the commodore, to whom he was introduced as his nephew's intimate friend; not but that, in all likelihood, he would have abated fomewhat of his hofpitality, had he known that he was the brother of Perry's miftrefs; but her name the old gentleman had never thought of afking, when he enquired into the particulars of his godfon's amour.

The captive being examined, in prefence of Trunnion and all his adherents, touching the ambufcade, owned, that being in the fervice of Gam Pickle, he had been prevailed upon by the folicitations of his mafter and the curate, to accompany them in their expedition, and undertake the part which he had acted againft the ftranger, whom he and his employers miftook for Peregrine. In confideration of this frank acknowledgment, and a fevere wound he had received in his right-arm, they refolved to inflict no other punifhment on this malefactor, than to detain him all night in the garrifon, and next morning carry him before a

justice

justice of the peace, to whom he repeated all th[illegible] had said over-night, and with his own hand subsc[illegible] his confession, copies of which were handed about [illegible] neighbourhood, to the unspeakable confusion and [illegible] grace of the curate and his promising pupil.

Meanwhile, Trunnion treated the young soldier with uncommon marks of respect, being prepossessed in his favour by this adventure, which he had so gallantly atchieved, as well as by the encomiums that Peregrine bestowed upon his valour and generosity. He liked his countenance, which was bold and hardy; admired his Herculean limbs; and delighted in asking questions concerning the service he had seen.

The day after his arrival, while the conversation turned on this last subject, the commodore, taking the pipe out of his mouth, 'I'll tell you what, brother,' said he, 'five and forty years ago, when I was third lieutenant of the Warwick man of war, there was a very stout young fellow on board, a subaltern officer of marines; his name was not unlike your own, d'ye see! being Guntlet, with a G. I remember he and I could not abide one another at first, because, d'ye see, I was a sailor and he a land-man, till we fell in with a Frenchman, whom we engaged for eight glasses, and at length boarded and took. I was the first man that stood on the enemy's deck, and should have come scurvily off, d'ye see, if Guntlet had not jumped to my assistance; but we soon cleared ship, and drove them to close quarters, so that they were obliged to strike; and from that day Guntlet and I were sworn brothers as long as he remained on board. He was exchanged into a marching regiment, and what became of him afterwards, Lord in heaven knows; but this I'll say of him, whether he be dead or alive, he feared no man that ever wore a head, and was, moreover, a very hearty messmate.'

The stranger's breast glowed at this eulogium, which was no sooner pronounced, than he eagerly asked, if the French ship was not the Diligence. The commo-

dore replied with a stare, the very same, my lad.'—'Then,' said Gauntlet, 'the person of whom you are pleased to make such honourable mention was my own father.'—'The devil he was!' cried Trunnion, shaking him by the hand; 'I am rejoiced to see a son of Ned Guntlet in my house.'

This discovery introduced a thousand questions, in the course of which the old gentleman learned the situation of his friend's family; and discharged innumerable execrations upon the ingratitude and injustice of the ministry, which had failed to provide for the son of such a brave soldier. Nor was his friendship confined to such ineffectual expressions; he that same evening signified to Peregrine a desire of doing something for his friend. This inclination was so much praised, encouraged, and promoted, by his godson, and even supported by his counsellor Hatchway, that our hero was empowered to present him with a sum of money sufficient to purchase a commission.

Though nothing could be more agreeable to Pickle than this permission, he was afraid that Godfrey's scrupulous disposition would hinder him from subjecting himself to any such obligation; and therefore proposed that he should be decoyed into his own interest by a feigned story, in consequence of which he would be prevailed upon to accept of the money, as a debt which the commodore had contracted of his father at sea. Trunnion made wry faces at this expedient, the necessity of which he could not conceive, without calling in question the common sense of Gauntlet; as he took it for granted, that such offers as these were not to be rejected on any consideration whatever. Besides, he could not digest an artifice, by which he himself must own that he had lived so many years, without manifesting the least intention of doing justice to his creditor. All these objections, however, were removed by the zeal and rhetorick of Peregrine, who represented that it would be impossible to befriend him on any other terms; that his silence hitherto would be im-

puted to his want of information touching the circumſtances and condition of his friend; and that his remembering and inſiſting upon diſcharging the obligation, after ſuch an interval of time, when the whole affair was in oblivion, would be the greateſt compliment he could pay to his own honour and integrity.

Thus perſuaded, he took an opportunity of Gauntlet's being alone with him to broach the affair; telling the young man, that his father had advanced a ſum of money for him, when they failed together, on account of the meſs, as well as to ſtop the mouth of a clamorous creditor at Portſmouth; and that the ſaid ſum, with intereſt, amounted to about four hundred pounds, which he would now, with great thankfulneſs, repay.

Godfrey was amazed at this declaration; and after a conſiderable pauſe replied, that he had never heard his parents mention any ſuch debt; that no memorandum or voucher of it was found among his father's paper's; and that, in all probability, it muſt have been diſcharged long ago, although the commodore, in ſuch a long courſe of time and hurry of occupation, might have forgot the repayment: he therefore deſired to be excuſed from accepting what in his own conſcience he believed was not his due; and complimented the old gentleman upon his being ſo ſcrupulouſly juſt and honourable.

The ſoldier's refuſal, which was matter of aſtoniſhment to Trunnion, increaſed his inclination to aſſiſt him; and, on pretence of acquitting his own character, he urged his beneficence with ſuch obſtinacy, that Gauntlet, afraid of diſobliging him, was in a manner compelled to receive a draft for the money, for which he ſubſcribed an ample diſcharge, and immediately tranſmitted the order to his mother, whom at the ſame time he informed of the circumſtances by which they had ſo unexpectedly gained this acceſſion of fortune.

Such a piece of news could not fail of being agreeable to Mrs. Gauntlet; who, by the firſt poſt, wrote a polite letter of acknowledgment to the commodore,

another

another to her own ſon, importing, that ſhe had already ſent the draft to a friend in London, with directions to depoſit it in the hands of a certain banker, for the purchaſe of the firſt enſigncy to be ſold; and ſhe took the liberty of ſending a third to Peregrine, couched in very affectionate terms, with a kind poſtſcript, ſigned by Miſs Sophy and his charming Emily.

This affair being tranſacted to the ſatisfaction of all concerned, preparations were ſet on foot for the departure of our hero, on whom his uncle ſettled an annuity of eight hundred pounds, being little leſs than one half of his whole income. By this time indeed the old gentleman could eaſily afford to alienate ſuch a part of his fortune, becauſe he entertained little or no company, kept few ſervants, was remarkably plain and frugal in his houſe-keeping. Mrs. Trunnion being now ſome years on the wrong ſide of fifty, her infirmities began to increaſe; and though her pride had ſuffered no diminution, her vanity was altogether ſubdued by her avarice.

A Swiſs valet de chambre, who had already made the tour of Europe, was hired for the care of Peregrine's own perſon; Pipes, being ignorant of the French language, as well as otherwiſe unfit for the office of a faſhionable attendant, it was reſolved that he ſhould remain in garriſon; and his place was immediately ſupplied by a Pariſian lacquey, engaged at London for that purpoſe. Pipes did not ſeem to reliſh this diſpoſition of things; and though he made no verbal objections to it, looked remarkably ſour at his ſucceſſor upon his firſt arrival; but this ſullen fit ſeemed gradually to wear off; and long before his maſter's departure, he had recovered his natural tranquillity and unconcern.

CHAP. XXXI.

The two young Gentlemen display their Talents for Gallantry, in the Course of which they are involved in a ludicrous Circumstance of Distress, and afterwards take Vengeance on the Author of their Mishap.

MEANWHILE our hero and his new friend, together with honest Jack Hatchway, made daily excursions into the country, visited the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, and frequently accompanied them to the chace; all three being exceedingly caressed on account of their talents, which could accommodate themselves with great facility to the tempers and turns of their entertainers. The lieutenant was a droll in his way, Peregrine possessed a great fund of sprightliness and good-humour, and Godfrey, among his other qualifications already recited, sung a most excellent song; so that the company of this triumvirate was courted in all parties, whether male or female; and if the hearts of our young gentlemen had not been pre-engaged, they would have met with opportunities in abundance of displaying their address in the art of love; not but that they gave a loose to their gallantry without much interesting their affections, and amused themselves with little intrigues, which, in the opinion of a man of pleasure, do not affect his fidelity to the acknowledged sovereign of his soul.

In the midst of these amusements, our hero received an intimation from his sister, that she should be overjoyed to meet him next day, at five o'clock in the afternoon, at the house of her nurse, who lived in a cottage hard by her father's habitation, she being debarred from all opportunity of seeing him in any other place by the severity of her mother, who suspected her inclination.

He accordingly obeyed the summons, and went at the time appointed to the place of rendezvous, where he met this affectionate young lady; who, when he entered the room, ran towards him with all the eagerness

of

of tranſport; flung her arms about his neck, and ſhed a flood of tears in his boſom, before ſhe could utter one word, except a repetition of 'My dear, dear brother!' He embraced her with all the piety of fraternal tenderneſs, wept over her in his turn, aſſured her that this was one of the happieſt moments of his life, and kindly thanked her for having reſiſted the example and diſobeyed the injunctions of his mother's unnatural averſion.

He was raviſhed to find by her converſation, that ſhe poſſeſſed a great ſhare of ſenſibility and prudent reflection; for ſhe lamented the infatuation of her parents with the moſt filial regret, and expreſſed ſuch abhorrence and concern at the villainous diſpoſition of her younger brother, as a humane ſiſter may be ſuppoſed to have entertained. He made her acquainted with all the circumſtances of his own fortune; and as he ſuppoſed ſhe ſpent her time very diſagreeably at home, among characters which muſt be ſhockingly intereſting, profeſſed a deſire of removing her into ſome other ſphere, where ſhe could live with more tranquillity and ſatisfaction.

She objected to this propoſal, as an expedient that would infallibly ſubject her to the implacable reſentment of her mother, whoſe favour and affection ſhe at preſent enjoyed but in a very inconſiderable degree; and they had canvaſſed divers ſchemes of correſponding for the future, when the voice of Mrs. Pickle was heard at the door.

Miſs Julia (that was the young lady's name) finding herſelf betrayed, was ſeized with a violent agitation of fear; and Peregrine ſcarce had time to encourage her with a promiſe of protection, before the door of the apartment being flung open, this irreconcileable parent ruſhed in, and with a furious aſpect flew directly at her trembling daughter, when the ſon interpoſing, received the firſt diſcharge of her fury.

Her eyes gleamed with all the rage of indignation, which choaked up her utterance, and ſeemed to con-

vulse her whole frame; she twisted her left hand in his hair, and with the other buffeted him about the face, till the blood gushed from his nostrils and mouth; while he defended his sister from the cruelty of Gam, who assaulted her from another quarter, seeing his brother engaged. This attack lasted several minutes with great violence, till at length Peregrine finding himself in danger of being overpowered, if he should remain any longer on the defensive, laid his brother on his back; then he disentangled his mother's hand from his own hair, and having pushed her gently out of the room, bolted the door on the inside; finally, turning to Gam, he threw him out at the window, among a parcel of hogs that fed under it. By this time Julia was almost quite distracted with terror; she knew she had offended beyond all hope of forgiveness, and from that moment considered herself as an exile from her father's house: in vain did her brother strive to console her with fresh protestations of love and protection; she counted herself extremely miserable in being obliged to endure the eternal resentment of a parent with whom she had hitherto lived, and dread the censure of the world, which from her mother's misrepresentation she was sensible would condemn her unheard. That she might not, however, neglect any means in her power of averting this storm, she resolved to appease, if possible, her mother's wrath with humiliation, and even appeal to the influence of her father, weak as it was, before she would despair of being forgiven. But the good lady spared her this unnecessary application, by telling her through the key-hole, that she must never expect to come within her father's door again; for from that hour she renounced her, as unworthy of her affection and regard. Julia weeping bitterly, endeavoured to soften the rigour of the sentence, by the most submissive and reasonable remonstrances; but as in her vindication she of necessity espoused her elder brother's cause, her endeavours, instead of soothing, served only to exasperate her mother to an higher pitch of indignation,

which discharged itself in invectives against Peregrine, whom she reviled with the epithets of a worthless, abandoned reprobate.

The youth hearing these unjust aspersions, trembled with resentment through every limb, assuring the upbraider that he considered her as an object of compassion; 'For, without all doubt,' said he, 'your diabolical rancour must be severely punished by the thorns of your own conscience, which this very instant taxes you with the malice and falshood of your reproaches. As for my sister, I bless God that you have not been able to infect her with your unnatural prejudice, which because she is too just, too virtuous, too humane to imbibe, you reject her as an alien to your blood, and turn her out unprovided into a barbarous world. But even there your vicious purpose shall be defeated; that same Providence that screened me from the cruelty of your hate, shall extend its protection to her, until I shall find it convenient to assert by law that right of maintenance which nature, it seems, hath bestowed upon us in vain. In the mean time, you will enjoy the satisfaction of paying an undivided attention to that darling son, whose amiable qualities have so long engaged and engrossed your love and esteem.'

This freedom of expostulation exalted his mother's ire to mere frenzy; she cursed him with the bitterest imprecations, and raved like a Bedlamite at the door, which she attempted to burst open. Her efforts were seconded by her favourite son, who denounced vengeance against Peregrine, made furious assaults against the lock, which resisted all their applications, until our hero, espying his friends Gauntlet and Pipes stepping over a stile that stood about a furlong from the window, called them to his assistance; giving them to understand how he was besieged, he desired they would keep off his mother, that he might the more easily secure his sister Julia's retreat. The young soldier entered accordingly, and posting himself between Mrs. Pickle and the door, gave the signal to his friend, who

lifting

lifting up his ſiſter in his arms, carried her ſafe without the clutches of this ſhe-dragon, while Pipes with his cudgel kept young maſter at bay.

The mother being thus deprived of her prey, ſprung upon Gauntlet like a lioneſs robbed of her whelps; and he muſt have ſuffered ſorely in the fleſh, had he not prevented her miſchievous intent by ſeizing both her wriſts, and ſo keeping her at due diſtance. In attempting to diſengage herſelf from his graſp, ſhe ſtruggled with ſuch exertion, and ſuffered ſuch agony of paſſion at the ſame time, that ſhe actually fell into a ſevere fit, during which ſhe was put to bed, and the confederates retired without farther moleſtation.

In the mean time, Peregrine was not a little perplexed about the diſpoſal of his ſiſter whom he had reſcued. He could not endure the thoughts of ſaddling the commodore with a new expence; and he was afraid of undertaking the charge of Julia, without his benefactor's advice and direction; for the preſent, however, he carried her to the houſe of a gentleman in the neighbourhood, whoſe lady was her godmother, where ſhe was received with great tenderneſs and condolence; and he purpoſed to inquire for ſome creditable houſe, where ſhe might be genteelly boarded in his abſence, reſolving to maintain her from the ſavings of his own allowance, which he thought might very well bear ſuch deduction. But this intention was fruſtrated by the publication of the whole affair, which was divulged next day, and ſoon reached the ears of Trunnion, who chid his godſon for having concealed the adventure; and, with the approbation of his wife, ordered him to bring Julia forthwith to the garriſon. The young gentleman, with tears of gratitude in his eyes, explained his deſign of maintaining her at his own expence, and earneſtly begged that he might not be deprived of that ſatisfaction. But his uncle was deaf to all his intreaties, and inſiſted upon her living in the garriſon, though for no other reaſon than that of being company to her

aunt; who, he obſerved, was loſt for want of converſation.

Julia was accordingly brought home, and ſettled under the tuition of Mrs. Trunnion; who, whatever face ſhe might put on the matter, could have diſpenſed with the ſociety of her niece; though ſhe was not without hope of gratifying her pique to Mrs. Pickle, by the intelligence ſhe would receive from the daughter of that lady's œconomy and domeſtick behaviour. The mother herſelf ſeemed conſcious of this advantage which her ſiſter-in-law had now gained over her; being as much chagrined at the news of Julia's reception in the garriſon, as if ſhe had heard of her own huſband's death. She even tortured her invention to propagate calumnies againſt the reputation of her own daughter, whom ſhe ſlandered in all companies; ſhe exclaimed againſt the commodore as an old ruffian who ſpirited up a rebellion among her children; and imputed the hoſpitality of his wife, in countenancing them, to nothing elſe but her inveterate enmity to their mother, whom they had diſobliged. She now inſiſted, in the moſt peremptory terms, upon her huſband's renouncing all commerce with the old lad of the caſtle and his adherents; and Mr. Gamaliel having by this time contracted other friendſhips, readily ſubmitted to her will; nay, even refuſed to communicate with the commodore one night, when they happened to meet by accident at the publick-houſe.

CHAP. XXXII.

The Commodore ſends a Challenge to Gamaliel, and is impoſed upon by a waggiſh Invention of the Lieutenant, Peregrine, and Gauntlet.

THIS affront Trunnion could by no means digeſt: he adviſed with the lieutenant upon the ſubject; and the reſult of their conſultation was a defiance which the old commander ſent to Pickle, demanding that he would meet him at ſuch a place on horſeback with a brace of piſtols, and give ſatisfaction for the ſlight he had put upon him.

Nothing

Nothing could have afforded more pleaſure to Jack, than the acceptance of this challenge, which he delivered verbally to Mr. Gamaliel, who was called out from the club at Tunley's for that purpoſe. The nature of this meſſage had an inſtantaneous effect upon the conſtitution of the pacifick Pickle, whoſe bowels yearned with apprehenſion, and underwent ſuch violent agitation on the ſpot, that one would have thought the operation proceeded from ſome ſevere joke of the apothecary which he had ſwallowed in his beer.

This meſſenger deſpairing of a ſatisfactory anſwer, left him in this woeful condition; and being loth to loſe any opportunity of raiſing the laugh againſt the commodore, went immediately and communicated the whole affair to the young gentlemen, intreating them, for the love of God, to concert ſome means of bringing old Hannibal into the field. The two friends reliſhed the propoſal, and after ſome deliberation, it was reſolved that Hatchway ſhould tell Trunnion his invitation was accepted by Gamaliel, who would meet him at the place appointed, with his ſecond, to-morrow in the twilight, becauſe if either ſhould fall, the other would have the better chance for eſcaping in the dark; that Godfrey ſhould perſonate old Pickle's friend, and Peregrine repreſent his own father, while the lieutenant ſhould take care in loading the piſtols to keep out the ſhot, ſo that no damage might be done in the rencounter.

Theſe circumſtances being adjuſted, the lieutenant returned to his principal with a moſt thundering reply from his antagoniſt, whoſe courageous behaviour, though it could not intimidate, did not fail to aſtoniſh the commodore, who aſcribed it to the ſpirit of his wife, which had inſpired him. Trunnion that inſtant deſired his counſellor to prepare his cartridge-box, and order the quieteſt horſe in the ſtable to be kept ready ſaddled for the occaſion; his eye ſeemed to lighten with alacrity and pleaſure at the proſpect of ſmelling gunpowder once more before his death; and when Jack

adviſed

advised him to make his will, in case of accident, he rejected his counsel with disdain, saying, 'What! dost think that Hawser Trunnion, who has stood the fire of so many floating batteries, runs any risk from the lousy pops of a landman? Thou shalt see! thou shalt see how I'll make him lower his top-sails.' Next day, Peregrine and the soldier provided themselves with horses at the publick-house, from whence, at the destined hour, they rode to the field of battle, each of them being muffled in a great-coat, which, with the dimness of the light, effectually shielded them from the knowledge of the one-eyed commander, who having taken horse, on pretence of enjoying the fresh air, soon appeared with Hatchway in his rear. When they came within sight of each other, the seconds advanced, in order to divide the ground, and regulate the measures of the combat; when it was determined by mutual consent, that two pistols should be discharged on each side, and if neither should prove decisive, recourse must be had to the broad swords, in order to ascertain the victory. These articles being settled, the opponents rode forward to their respective stations, when Peregrine cocking his pistol, and presenting, counterfeited his father's voice, bidding Trunnion take care of his remaining eye. The commodore took his advice, being unwilling to hazard his day-light, and very deliberately opposed the patched side of his face to the muzzle of his antagonist's piece, desiring him to do his duty without farther jaw. The young man accordingly fired, and the distance being small, the wad of his pistol took place with a smart stroke on the forehead of Trunnion, who mistaking it for a ball, which he thought was lodged in his brain, spurred up his steed in a state of desperation towards his antagonist, and holding his piece within two yards of his body, let it off, without any regard to the laws of battle. Surprized and enraged to see it had made no impression, he hallooed in a terrible tone, 'O, damn ye! you have got your netting stuffed, I see!' and advancing, discharged his second

cond piſtol ſo near his godſon's head, that had he not been defended by his great coat, the powder muſt have ſcorched his face. Having thus thrown away his fire, he remained at the mercy of Peregrine, who clapping the piece he had in reſerve to his head, commanded him to beg his life, and aſk pardon for his preſumption. The commodore made no reply to this imperious injunction, but dropping his piſtol, and unſheathing his broad ſword in an inſtant, attacked our hero with ſuch incredible agility, that if he had not made ſhift to ward off the ſtroke with his piece, the adventure, in all likelihood, would have turned out a very tragical joke. Peregrine finding it would be in vain for him to think of drawing his weapon, or of ſtanding on the defenſive againſt this furious aggreſſor, very fairly clapped ſpurs to his nag, and ſought his ſafety in flight. Trunnion purſued him with infinite eagerneſs, and his ſteed being the better of the two, would have overtaken the fugitive to his peril, had he not been unfortunately encountered by the boughs of a tree, that happened to ſtand on his blind-ſide, and incommoded him ſo much, that he was fain to quit his ſword, and lay hold on the mane, in order to maintain his ſeat. Perry, perceiving his diſaſter, wheeled about, and now finding leiſure to produce his weapon, returned upon his diſarmed foe, brandiſhing his Ferrara, threatening to make him ſhorter by the head, if he would not immediately crave quarter, and yield. There was nothing farther from the intention of the old gentleman than ſuch ſubmiſſion, which he flatly refuſed to pay; alledging, that he had already compelled his enemy to clap on all his ſails, and that his own preſent misfortune was owing to accident; all one as if a ſhip ſhould be attacked, after ſhe had been obliged to heave her guns overboard in a ſtorm.

Before Peregrine had time to anſwer this remonſtrances, the lieutenant interpoſed, and taking cognizance of the caſe, eſtabliſhed a truce, until he and the other ſecond ſhould diſcuſs and decide upon the merits of

of the cause. They accordingly retired to a small distance, and after having conferred a few minutes, Hatchway returned, and pronounced the commodore vanquished by the chance of war.

Never was rage more transported than that which took possession of old Hannibal, when he heard the sentence: it was some time before he could utter aught, except the reproachful expression, 'You lie!' which he repeated more than twenty times, in a sort of delirious insensibility. When he recovered the farther use of his speech, he abused the arbitrators with such bitter invectives, renouncing their sentence, and appealing to another trial, that the confederates began to repent of having carried the joke so far; and Peregrine, in order to appease his choler, owned himself overcome.

This acknowledgment calmed the tumult of his wrath, though he could not for some days forgive the lieutenant; and the two young gentlemen rode back to Tunley's; while Hatchway, taking the commodore's horse by the bridle, reconducted him to his mansion, growling all the way to Jack for his unjust and unfriendly decree; though he could not help observing, as how he had made his words good, in making his adversary strike his top-sails: 'And yet,' said he, 'before God! I think the fellow's head is made of a wool-pack; for my shot rebounded from his face like a wad of spun-yarn from the walls of a ship. But if so be that son of a bitch of a tree hadn't come athwart my weather-bow, d'ye see! I'll be damned if I hadn't snapt his main-yard in the slings, and mayhap let out his bulge water into the bargain.' He seemed particularly vain of this exploit, which dwelt upon his imagination, and was cherished as the child of his old age; for though he could not with decency rehearse it to the young men and his wife at supper, he gave shrewd hints of his own manhood, even at these years, and attested Hatchway as a voucher for his mettle; while the triumvirate, diverted by his vanity, enjoyed in secret the success of their imposition.

CHAP. XXXIII.

Peregrine takes Leave of his Aunt and Siſter; ſets out from the Garriſon; parts with his Uncle and Hatchway on the Road; and, with his Governor, arrives in Safety at Dover.

THIS, however, was the laſt effort of invention which they practiſed upon him; and every thing being now prepared for the departure of his godſon, that hopeful youth in two days took leave of all his friends in the neighbourhood. He was cloſeted two whole hours with his aunt, who enriched him with many pious advices; recapitulated all the benefits which, through her means, had been conferred upon him ſince his infancy; cautioned him againſt the temptations of lewd women, who bring many a man to a morſel of bread; laid ſtrict injunctions upon him to live in the fear of the Lord and the true proteſtant faith; to eſchew quarrels and contention; to treat Mr. Jolter with reverence and regard; and, above all things, to abſtain from the beaſtly ſin of drunkenneſs, which expoſed a man to the ſcorn and contempt of his fellow-creatures, and by diveſting him of reaſon and reflection, renders him fit for all manner of vice and debauchery. She recommended to him œconomy and the care of his health; bade him remember the honour of his family; and in all the circumſtances of his behaviour, aſſured him, that he might always depend upon the friendſhip and generoſity of the commodore. Finally, preſenting him with her own picture ſet in gold, and a hundred guineas from her privy purſe, ſhe embraced him affectionately, and wiſhed him all manner of happineſs and proſperity.

Being thus kindly diſmiſſed by Mrs. Trunnion, he locked himſelf up with his ſiſter Julia, whom he admoniſhed to cultivate her aunt with the moſt complaiſant and reſpectful attention, without ſtooping to any circumſtance of ſubmiſſion that ſhe ſhould judge unworthy of her practice: he proteſted that his chief ſtudy

ſtudy ſhould be to make her amends for the privilege ſhe had forfeited by her affection for him; intreated her to enter into no engagement without his knowledge and approbation; put into her hand the purſe which he had received from his aunt, to defray her pocket expences in his abſence; and parted from her, not without tears, after ſhe had for ſome minutes hung about his neck, kiſſing him and weeping in the moſt pathetick ſilence.

Having performed theſe duties of affection and conſanguinity over-night, he went to bed, and was, by his own direction, called at four o'clock in the morning, when he found the poſt-chaiſe, coach, and riding-horſes, ready at the gate, his friends Gauntlet and Hatchway on foot, the commodore himſelf almoſt dreſſed, and every ſervant in the garriſon aſſembled in the yard, to wiſh him a good journey. Our hero ſhook each of theſe humble friends by the hand, tipping them at the ſame time with marks of his bounty; and was very much ſurprized when he could not perceive his old attendant Pipes among the number. When he expreſſed his wonder at this diſreſpectful omiſſion of Tom, ſome of thoſe preſent ran to his chamber, in order to give him a call, but his hammock and room were both deſerted, and they ſoon returned with an account of his having eloped. Peregrine was diſturbed at this information, believing that the fellow had taken ſome deſperate courſe in conſequence of his being diſmiſſed from his ſervice, and began to wiſh that he had indulged his inclination, by retaining him ſtill about his perſon. However, as there was now no other remedy, he recommended him ſtrenuouſly to the particular favour of his uncle and Hatchway, in caſe he ſhould appear again; and as he went out of the gate, was ſaluted with three cheers by all the domeſticks in the family. The commodore, Gauntlet, lieutenant, Peregrine, and Jolter, went into the coach together, that they might enjoy each other's converſation as much as poſſible, reſolving to breakfaſt at an inn on the road,

where Trunnion and Hatchway intended to bid our adventurer farewel. The valet de chambre got into the post-chaise, the French lacquey rode one horse and led another, one of the valets of the garrison mounted at the back of the coach; and thus the cavalcade set out on the road to Dover. As the commodore could not bear the fatigue of jolting, they travelled at an easy pace during the first stage; so that the old gentleman had an opportunity of communicating his exhortations to his godson, with regard to his conduct abroad; he advised him, now that he was going into foreign parts, to be upon his guard against the fair weather of the French politesse, which was no more to be trusted than a whirlpool at sea. He observed that many young men had gone to Paris with good cargoes of sense, and returned with a great deal of canvas, and no ballast at all; whereby they became crank all the days of their lives, and sometimes carried their keels above water. He desired Mr. Jolter to keep his pupil out of the clutches of those sharking priests who lie in wait to make converts of all young strangers, and in a particular manner cautioned the youth against carnal conversation with the Parisian dames, who, he understood, were no better than gaudy fire-ships, ready primed with death and destruction.

Peregrine listened with great respect, thanking him for his kind admonitions, which he faithfully promised to observe. They halted and breakfasted at the end of the stage, where Jolter provided himself with a horse, and the commodore settled the method of corresponding with his nephew. The minute of parting being arrived, the old commander wrung his godson by the hand, saying—'I wish thee a prosperous voyage and good cheer, my lad! my timbers are now a little crazy, d'ye see; and God knows if I shall keep afloat till such time as I see thee again; but howsomever, hap what will, thou wilt find thyself in a condition to keep in the line with the best of thy fellows.' He then reminded Gauntlet of his promise to call at the garrison in

in his return from Dover, and imparted ſomething in a whiſper to the governor, while Jack Hatchway, unable to ſpeak, pulled his hat over his eyes, and ſqueezing Peregrine by the hand, gave him an iron piſtol of curious workmanſhip, as a memorial of his friendſhip. Our youth, who was not unmoved on this occaſion, received the pledge, which he acknowledged with the preſent of a ſilver tobacco-box, bought for that purpoſe; and the two lads of the caſtle getting into the coach, were driven homewards in a ſtate of ſilent dejection.

Godfrey and Peregrine ſeated themſelves in the poſt-chaiſe, and Jolter, the valet de chambre, and lacquey, beſtriding their beaſts, they proceeded for the place of their deſtination, at which they arrived in ſafety that ſame night, and beſpoke a paſſage in the packet-boat which was to ſail next day.

CHAP. XXXIV.

He adjuſts the Method of his Correſpondence with Gauntlet; meets by Accident with an Italian Charlatan and a certain Apothecary, who proves to be a noted Character.

THERE the two friends adjuſted the articles of their future correſpondence, and Peregrine having written a letter to his miſtreſs, wherein he renewed his former vows of eternal fidelity, it was entruſted to the care of her brother, while Mr. Jolter, at the deſire of his pupil, provided an elegant ſupper, and ſome excellent Burgundy, that they might ſpend this eve of his departure with the greater enjoyment.

Things being thus diſpoſed, and a ſervant employed in laying the cloth, their ears were of a ſudden invaded by a ſtrange tumultuous noiſe in the next room, occaſioned by the overthrow of tables, chairs, and glaſſes, with odd unintelligible exclamations in broken French, and a jargon of threats in the Welſh dialect. Our young gentleman ran immediately into the apartment from whence this clamour ſeemed to proceed, and found a thin, meagre, ſwarthy, figure, gaſping in all the agony of fear, under the hands of a ſquat, thick, hard-featured

man, who collared him with great demonſtrations of wrath, ſaying—'If you was as mighty a magician as Owen Glendower, or the witch of Entor, look you, aye, or as Paul Beor himſelf, I will meke pold, by the aſſiſtance of Got, and in his majeſty's naam, to ſeize, and ſecure, and confine, and confront you, until ſuch time as you ſuffer, and endure, and undergo, the pains and penalties of the law, for your diabolical practices. Shentlements,' added he, turning to our adventurers, 'I take you to witneſs that I proteſt, and aſſert, and avow, that this perſon is as pig a necromancer as you would deſire to pehold; and I ſupplicate, and beſeech, and intreat of you, that he may be prought before his petters, and compelled to give an account of his compact and commerce with the imps of darkneſs, look you; for as I am a chriſtian ſoul, and hope for joyful reſurrection, I have this pleſſed evening ſeen him perform ſuch things as could not be done without the aid, and inſtruction, and connivance, of the tevil.'

Gauntlet ſeemed to enter into the ſentiments of this Welſh reformer, and actually laid hold on the delinquent's ſhoulder, crying—'Damn the raſcal! I'll lay any wager that he's a Jeſuit; for none of his order travel without a familiar.' But Peregrine, who looked upon the affair in another point of view, interpoſed in behalf of the ſtranger, whom he freed from his aggreſſors, obſerving that there was no occaſion to uſe violence; and aſked in French what he had done to incur the cenſure of the informer. The poor foreigner, more dead than alive, anſwered, that he was an Italian charlatan, who had practiſed with ſome reputation in Padua, until he had the misfortune to attract the notice of the Inquiſition, by exhibiting certain wonderful performances by his ſkill in natural knowledge, which that tribunal conſidered as the effects of ſorcery, and perſecuted him accordingly; ſo that he had been fain to make a precipitate retreat into France; where not finding his account in his talents, he was now arrived in England, with a view of practiſing his art in Lon-

don; and that in consequence of a specimen which he had given to a company below, the cholerick gentleman had followed him up stairs to his own apartment, and assaulted him in that inhospitable manner. He therefore earnestly begged that our hero would take him under his protection; and if he entertained the least suspicion of his employing preternatural means in the operations of his art, he would freely communicate all the secrets in his possession.

The youth dispelled his apprehension, by assuring him that he was in no danger of suffering for his art in England; where, if ever he should be questioned by the zeal of superstitious individuals, he had nothing to do but appeal to the next justice of the peace, who would immediately acquit him of the charge, and punish his accusers for their impertinence and indiscretion.

He then told Gauntlet and the Welshman, that the stranger had a good action against them for an assault, by virtue of an act of parliament, which makes it criminal for any person to accuse another of sorcery and witchcraft, these idle notions being now justly exploded by all sensible men. Mr. Jolter, who had by this time joined the company, could not help signifying his dissent from this opinion of his pupil, which he endeavoured to invalidate by the authority of Scripture, quotations from the fathers, and the confession of many wretches who suffered death for having carried on correspondence with evil spirits, together with the evidence of Satan's Invisible World, and Moreton's History of Witchcraft.

The soldier corroborated these testimonies by facts that had happened within the sphere of his own knowledge, and in particular mentioned the case of an old woman of the parish in which he was born, who used to transform herself into the shape of sundry animals, and was at last killed by small-shot, in the character of an hare. The Welshman, thus supported, expressed his surprize at hearing that the legislature had shewn such

ſuch tenderneſs for criminals of ſo dark a hue; and offered to prove, by undeniable inſtances, that there was not a mountain in Wales, which had not been in his memory the ſcene of ſome necromancy and witchcraft; ‘Wherefore,’ ſaid he, ‘I am aſſuredly more than apove aſtoniſhed, and confounded, and concerned, that the parliament of Great Pritain ſhould in their great wiſdoms, and their prudence, and their penetration, give countenance and encouragement, look you, to the works of darkneſs, and the empire of Pelzepup; ofer and apove the evidence of holy writ, and thoſe writers who have been quoted by that aggurate and learned ſhentleman, we are informed by profane hiſtory, of the pribbles and pranks of the old ſerpent, in the bortents and oragles of antiquity; as you will find in that moſt excellent hiſtorian Bolypius, and Titus Liſius; aye, and moreofer, in the Commentaries of Julius Cæſar himſelf; who, as the ole world knows, was a moſt famous, and a moſt faliant, and a moſt wiſe, and a moſt prudent, and a moſt fortunate chieftan, and a moſt renowned orator; aye, and a moſt elegant writer to hoot.’

Peregrine did not think proper to enter the liſts of diſpute with three ſuch obſtinate antagoniſts; but contented himſelf with ſaying, that he believed it would be no difficult matter to impugn the arguments they had advanced; though he did not find himſelf at all diſpoſed to undertake the taſk, which muſt of courſe break in upon the evening's entertainment. He therefore invited the Italian to ſupper, and aſked the ſame favour of his accuſer, who ſeemed to have ſomething curious and characteriſtick in his manner and diſpoſition; reſolving to make himſelf an eye-witneſs of thoſe ſurprizing feats, which had given offence to the cholerick Briton. This ſcrupulous gentleman thanked our hero for his courteſy, but declined communicating with the ſtranger, until his character ſhould be farther explained; upon which his inviter, after ſome converſation with the chartalan, aſſured him that he would himſelf undertake for the innocence of his art; and

then

then he was prevailed upon to favour them with his company.

In the courſe of the converſation, Peregrine learned that the Welſhman was a ſurgeon of Canterbury, who had been called into a conſultation at Dover, and underſtanding that his name was Morgan, took the liberty of aſking if he was not the perſon ſo reſpectfully mentioned in the Adventures of Roderick Random. Mr. Morgan aſſumed a look of gravity and importance at this interrogation, and ſcrewing up his mouth, anſwered—'Mr. Rantum, my goot Sir, I believe upon my conſcience and ſalfation, is my very goot frient and well-wiſher; and he and I have been companions, and meſs-mates, and fellow-ſufferers, look you; but nevertheleſs for all that, peradventure, he hath not pehaved with ſo much complaiſance, and affability, and reſpect, as I might have expected from him; pecauſe he hath revealed, and tivulged, and bupliſhed, our private affairs, without my knowledge, and privity, and conſent; but, as Got is my Safiour, I think he had no evil intention in his pelly; and though there be certain perſons, look you, who, as I am told, take upon them to laugh at his deſcriptions of my perſon, deportment, and converſation, I do affirm and maintain, and inſiſt, with my heart, and my plood, and my ſoul, that thoſe perſons are no petter than ignorant aſſes, and that they know not how to diſcern, and diſtinguiſh, and define, true ridicule, or as Ariſtotle calls it, the *to Geloion*, no more, look you, than a herd of mountain-goats; for I will make pold to obſerve, and I hope this goot company will be of the ſame opinion, that there is nothing ſaid of me in that performance which is unworthy of a chriſtian and a ſhentleman.'

Our young gentleman and his friends acquieſced in the juſtneſs of his obſervation. Peregrine particularly aſſured him, that from reading the book, he had conceived the utmoſt regard and veneration for his character; and that he thought himſelf extremely fortunate in having this opportunity of enjoying his converſa-
tion.

tion. Morgan, not a little proud of ſuch advances from a perſon of Peregrine's appearance, returned the compliment with a profuſion of civility, and in the warmth of acknowledgment, expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing him and his company at his houſe in Canterbury; 'I will not pretend, or preſume, kind Sir,' ſaid he, 'to entertain you according to your merits and deſerts; but you ſhall be as welcome to my poor cottage, and my wife and family, as the Prince of Wales himſelf; and it ſhall go hard, if one way or other, I do not find ways and means of making you confeſs that there is ſome goot fellowſhip in an ancient Priton: for though I am not petter than a ſimple apothecary, I have as goot ploot circulating in my veins as any he in the country; and I can deſcribe, and delineate, and demonſtrate, my pedigree to the ſatisfaction of the 'ole 'orld; and moreofer, by Got's goot providence and aſſiſtance, I can afford to treat my friend with a joint of goot mutton, and a pottle of excellent wine, and no tradeſman can peard me with a bill.' He was congratulated on his happy ſituation, and aſſured that our youth would viſit him on his return from France, provided he ſhould take Canterbury in his route. As Peregrine manifeſted an inclination of being acquainted with the ſtate of his affairs, he very complaiſantly ſatisfied his curioſity, by giving him to know, that his ſpouſe had left off breeding, after having bleſſed him with two boys and a girl, who were ſtill alive and well; that he lived in good eſteem with his neighbours, and by his practice, which was conſiderably extended immediately after the publication of Roderick Random, had ſaved ſome thouſand pounds. He had begun to think of retiring among his own relations in Glamorganſhire, though his wife had made objection to this propoſal, and oppoſed the execution of it with ſuch obſtinacy, that he had been at infinite pains in aſſerting his own prerogative, by convincing her both from reaſon and example, that he was king and prieſt in his own family, and that ſhe owed the moſt implicit

ſubmiſſion

submission to his will. He likewise informed the company, that he had lately seen his friend Roderick, who had come from London on purpose to visit him, after having gained his law-suit with Mr. Topehall, who was obliged to pay Narcissa's fortune; that Mr. Random, in all appearance, led a very happy life in the conversation of his father and bedfellow, by whom he enjoyed a son and daughter! and that Morgan had received in a present from him, a piece of very fine linen of his wife's own making, several kits of salmon, and two casks of pickled pork, the most delicate he had ever tasted; together with a barrel of excellent herrings for salmagundy, which he knew to be his favourite dish.

This topick of conversation being discussed, the Italian was desired to exhibit a specimen of his art, and in a few minutes conducted the company into the next room, where, to their great astonishment and affright, they beheld a thousand serpents winding along the cieling. Morgan, struck with this phenomenon, which he had not seen before, began to utter exorcisms with great devotion, Mr. Jolter ran terrified out of the room, Gauntlet drew his hanger, and Peregrine himself was disconcerted. The operator perceiving their confusion, desired them to retire, and calling them back in an instant, there was not a viper to be seen. He raised their admiration by sundry other performances, and the Welshman's former opinion and abhorrence of his character began to recur; when, in consideration of the civility with which he had been treated, this Italian imparted to them all the methods by which he had acted such wonders, that were no other than the effects of natural causes curiously combined; so that Morgan became a convert to his skill, asked pardon for the suspicion he had entertained, and invited the stranger to pass a few days with him at Canterbury. The scruples of Godfrey and Jolter were removed at the same time, and Peregrine testified his satisfaction by a handsome gratuity which he bestowed upon their entertainer.

The evening being spent in this sociable manner,

every

every man retired to his reſpective chamber, and ne
morning they breakfaſted together; when Morgan d
clared he would ſtay till he ſhould ſee our hero fair
embarked, that he might have the pleaſure of M
Gauntlet's company to his own habitation: mean
while, by the ſkipper's advice, the ſervants were o
dered to carry a ſtore of wine and proviſion on boa
in caſe of accident; and as the packet-boat could
ſail before one o'clock, the company walked up hill
viſit the caſtle, where they ſaw the ſword of Julius C
ſar, and Queen Elizabeth's pocket-piſtol; repea
Shakſpear's deſcription, while they ſurveyed the chalk
cliffs on each ſide; and caſt their eyes towards the c
of Calais, that was obſcured by a thick cloud, whi
did not much regale their eye-ſight, becauſe it ſeem
to portend foul weather.

Having viewed every thing remarkable in this plac
they returned to the pier; where, after the complimen
of parting, and an affectionate embrace between t
two young gentlemen, Peregrine and his governor ſt
ped on board, the ſails were hoiſted, and they went
ſea with a fair wind, while Godfrey, Morgan, and t
conjuror, walked back to the inn, from whence the
ſet out for Canterbury before dinner.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.